

# First Principles: From Unitary Computation to Physical Reality

## A QCA Perspective on the Foundations of Physics

Auric

2025



# Contents

<b>I</b>	<b>The Birth of Axioms</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>1</b>	<b>The Necessity of Discrete Ontology</b>	<b>3</b>
1.1	1.1 Zeno's Paradox and the Ghost of Continuum	3
1.1.1	1.1.1 Zeno's Dichotomy Paradox	3
1.1.2	1.1.2 The Information Density Catastrophe of Continuum	3
1.1.3	1.1.3 Ultraviolet Divergence in Quantum Field Theory	4
1.1.4	1.1.4 The Solution of Discrete Ontology	4
1.1.5	1.1.5 The Necessity of Discreteness	4
1.2	1.2 Black Hole Entropy and Bekenstein Bound: The Universe as a Finite-Capacity Hard Drive	5
1.2.1	1.2.1 Bekenstein's Insight: Does Information Have Volume?	5
1.2.2	1.2.2 Planck Pixels and Finite Capacity	5
1.2.3	1.2.3 The End of Continuum	6
1.2.4	1.2.4 Conclusion: The Universe as a Finite State Machine	6
1.3	1.3 Information Realism: Bits and Qubits as the Atoms of Matter	7
1.3.1	1.3.1 "It from Bit"	7
1.3.2	1.3.2 Qubits: The Minimal Units of Physical Reality	7
1.3.3	1.3.3 From Information to Matter: Reconstruction of Elementary Particles	8
1.3.4	1.3.4 Conclusion: Computational Ontology	8
<b>2</b>	<b>The Ultimate Axiom <math>\Omega</math></b>	<b>9</b>
2.1	2.1 Axiom Statement: The Universe is a Quantum Cellular Automaton (QCA) Operating on Discrete Lattice Points Following Local Unitary Evolution Rules	9
2.2	2.2 Why Unitarity? — Conservation of Probability and Logical Consistency	10
2.2.1	2.2.1 Reversibility and the Eternity of Information	10
2.2.2	2.2.2 The Rigidity of Logic	11
2.2.3	2.2.3 Reconciliation with the Measurement Problem	11
2.3	2.3 Why Locality? — Avoiding "God's Eye View" and Action at a Distance	12
2.3.1	2.3.1 The End of God's Eye View: Full Connection Means No Structure	12
2.3.2	2.3.2 The Birth of Geometry: Distance as Delay	13
2.3.3	2.3.3 Clarification: Quantum Non-locality vs. Dynamical Locality	13
2.3.4	2.3.4 Conclusion: A Universe Without Supermen	14
2.4	2.4 Formal Definition: Graph $\Lambda$ , Hilbert Space $\mathcal{H}$ , and Update Operator $\hat{U}$	14
2.4.1	2.4.1 Definition 2.4.1: Discrete Geometric Background $\Lambda$	15
2.4.2	2.4.2 Definition 2.4.2: Quantum State Space $\mathcal{H}$	15
2.4.3	2.4.3 Definition 2.4.3: Dynamical Evolution $\hat{U}$	16
2.4.4	2.4.4 Physical Interpretation: Definition of Light Speed $c$	17

<b>II</b>	<b>The Emergence of Spacetime</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>3</b>	<b>Causality and the Speed of Light</b>	<b>21</b>
3.1	3.1 The Discrete Origin of Light Cones: Deriving Maximum Signal Velocity $c$ from Lattice Hopping . . . . .	21
3.1.1	3.1.1 Definition of Influence: Commutators as Causal Detectors . . . . .	22
3.1.2	3.1.2 Strict Light Cone Theorem . . . . .	22
3.1.3	3.1.3 Ontological Definition of Light Speed $c$ . . . . .	23
3.1.4	3.1.4 Geometrization of Causality . . . . .	24
3.1.5	3.1.5 Summary . . . . .	25
3.2	3.2 Light Path Conservation Theorem: Proving $v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2 = c^2$ from Unitarity .	26
3.2.1	3.2.1 Geometric Definition of Information Rate . . . . .	26
3.2.2	3.2.2 Orthogonal Decomposition and Pythagorean Theorem . . . . .	27
3.2.3	3.2.3 Physical Interpretation: Demystifying Special Relativity . . . . .	31
3.2.4	3.2.4 Conclusion . . . . .	33
3.3	3.3 Derivation of Lorentz Transformation: No Geometry, Only Statistics of Resource Allocation . . . . .	35
3.3.1	3.3.1 Definition of Reference Frames: Who Is Watching? . . . . .	37
3.3.2	3.3.2 Time Dilation: Relativity of Counting . . . . .	38
3.3.3	3.3.3 Length Contraction: Counting Signal Round Trips . . . . .	41
3.3.4	3.3.4 Algebraic Reconstruction of Lorentz Transformation Matrix . . . . .	44
3.3.5	3.3.5 Conclusion: Geometry is a Statistical Illusion . . . . .	47
<b>4</b>	<b>Gravity as Statistical Necessity</b>	<b>51</b>
4.1	4.1 Entanglement and Geometry: Spacetime Distance as Quantum Mutual Information . . . . .	52
4.1.1	4.1.1 Microscopic Revelation of Ryu-Takayanagi Formula . . . . .	53
4.1.2	4.1.2 Definition: Information Distance . . . . .	54
4.1.3	4.1.3 Geometric Reconstruction: From Network to Manifold . . . . .	57
4.1.4	4.1.4 Summary . . . . .	60
4.2	4.2 Local Information Volume Conservation: Why Must Space Expand When Information Compresses Time? . . . . .	61
4.2.1	4.2.1 Discrete Correspondence of Liouville Theorem . . . . .	63
4.2.2	4.2.2 Antagonism Between Time Dilation and Space Expansion . . . . .	65
4.2.3	4.2.3 Derivation of Optical Metric . . . . .	69
4.2.4	4.2.4 Solving the Half-Angle Problem . . . . .	71
4.2.5	4.2.5 Summary . . . . .	72
4.3	4.3 Entropic Derivation of Einstein Field Equations: Proof of IGVP Principle . .	74
4.3.1	4.3.1 Microscopic Mechanism of Entropic Force . . . . .	76
4.3.2	4.3.2 Construction of IGVP Action . . . . .	78
4.3.3	4.3.3 Derivation of Field Equations . . . . .	80
4.3.4	4.3.4 Reconstruction of Physical Meaning: Equation of State of Spacetime	82
4.4	4.4 Black Holes: Entanglement Knots in QCA Networks and Holographic Screens	85
4.4.1	4.4.1 Limit of Information Congestion: Horizon Formation . . . . .	87
4.4.2	4.4.2 Microscopic Statistics of Entropy: Why Area? . . . . .	89
4.4.3	4.4.3 Resolution of Singularities and Internal Structure . . . . .	92
4.4.4	4.4.4 Hawking Radiation and Unitarity Restoration . . . . .	94
4.4.5	4.4.5 Summary . . . . .	97

<b>III</b>	<b>The Emergence of Matter</b>	<b>99</b>
<b>5</b>	<b>The Topological Origin of Mass</b>	<b>101</b>
5.1	5.1 Why Do Photons Have No Mass? — Pure Translation Modes . . . . .	101
5.1.1	5.1.1 Definition 5.1 (Translation-Invariant Mode) . . . . .	102
5.1.2	5.1.2 Theorem 5.1 (Massless Theorem) . . . . .	103
5.1.3	5.1.3 Physical Picture . . . . .	105
5.2	5.2 Matter as Topological Knots: Self-Referential Loops and Winding Numbers .	106
5.2.1	5.2.1 Schrödinger's Trembling and "Photon in a Box" Model . . . . .	108
5.2.2	5.2.2 Topology of Momentum Space: Winding Number . . . . .	111
5.2.3	5.2.3 Mass Generation Theorem . . . . .	113
5.2.4	5.2.4 Geometric Meaning of Self-Reference . . . . .	122
5.2.5	5.2.5 Summary . . . . .	125
5.3	5.3 Mass as Impedance: Information Refresh Rate Required to Maintain Internal Oscillation ( $v_{int}$ ) . . . . .	130
5.3.1	5.3.1 Internal Refresh Rate and Cost of Existence . . . . .	134
5.3.2	5.3.2 Impedance Model: Microscopic Derivation of Inertia . . . . .	139
5.3.3	5.3.3 Mass as "Vorticity" of Information Flow . . . . .	149
5.3.4	5.3.4 Summary . . . . .	153
5.4	5.4 Origin of Fermion Statistics: Riccati Square Root and $\mathbb{Z}_2$ Phase . . . . .	156
5.4.1	5.4.1 Input-Output Relations of Self-Referential Systems . . . . .	161
5.4.2	5.4.2 Fixed Points and Square Root Branches . . . . .	165
5.4.3	5.4.3 Rotation, Exchange, and $\mathbb{Z}_2$ Phase . . . . .	168
5.4.4	5.4.4 Ontological Status of Spinors . . . . .	175
5.4.5	5.4.5 Summary: The Trio of Matter . . . . .	179
<b>6</b>	<b>Interactions and Gauge Fields</b>	<b>185</b>
6.1	6.1 Independence of Local Reference Frames: Why Does Each Cell Need "Transla- tion"? . . . . .	186
6.1.1	6.1.1 Axiom 6.1 (Reference Frame Locality) . . . . .	192
6.1.2	6.1.2 Challenge of Communication . . . . .	197
6.1.3	6.1.3 Solution: Connection Field . . . . .	199
6.1.4	6.1.4 Physical Picture . . . . .	203
6.2	6.2 Necessity of Link Variables: Derivation of Maxwell and Yang-Mills Equations	207
6.2.1	6.2.1 Closed Loops and Information Distortion: Geometric Definition of Field Strength . . . . .	212
6.2.2	6.2.2 Minimal Distortion Principle: Origin of Action . . . . .	219
6.2.3	6.2.3 Derivation of Dynamical Equations . . . . .	224
6.2.4	6.2.4 Special Properties of Non-Abelian Fields: Why Do Gluons Self-Interact?	229
6.2.5	6.2.5 Summary . . . . .	234
6.3	6.3 Geometric Meaning of Coupling Constants: Network Connectivity and Infor- mation Leakage Rate . . . . .	239
6.3.1	6.3.1 Coupling as Branching Ratio . . . . .	244
6.3.2	6.3.2 Geometric Origin: Dimension and Connectivity Number . . . . .	250
6.3.3	6.3.3 Discrete Interpretation of Renormalization Group Flow: Resolution and Screening . . . . .	256
6.3.4	6.3.4 Derivation Conjecture of Fine Structure Constant $\alpha$ . . . . .	262
6.3.5	6.3.5 Summary . . . . .	267

<b>IV</b>	<b>The Emergence of Observation</b>	<b>273</b>
<b>7</b>	<b>Quantum Measurement and Objectivity</b>	<b>275</b>
7.1	7.1 The Discrete Solution to Schrödinger's Cat: Entanglement and Branching under Unitary Evolution . . . . .	276
7.1.1	7.1.1 Physicalization of Observers . . . . .	285
7.1.2	7.1.2 Dynamical Isolation of Branches . . . . .	288
7.2	7.2 Combinatorial Proof of Born Rule: Based on Zurek Rotation and Microstate Counting . . . . .	296
7.2.1	7.2.1 Discrete Ontology of Amplitudes: Weights as Path Counting . . . . .	301
7.2.2	7.2.2 Schmidt Decomposition and Environment-Assisted Invariance (Envariance) . . . . .	307
7.2.3	7.2.3 Fine-Graining: From Amplitudes to Counting . . . . .	314
7.2.4	7.2.4 Why Square? — Statistics of Pythagorean Theorem . . . . .	319
7.2.5	7.2.5 Conclusion . . . . .	325
7.3	7.3 The Achievement of Objective Reality: Nash Equilibrium and Consensus Geometry in Multi-Agent Systems . . . . .	329
7.3.1	7.3.1 Wigner's Friend and Consensus Puzzle . . . . .	333
7.3.2	7.3.2 Nash Equilibrium: Why Do We See the Same Moon? . . . . .	341
7.3.3	7.3.3 Consensus Geometry: Spacetime as the Largest Public Ledger . . . . .	349
7.3.4	7.3.4 Layers of Reality . . . . .	355
7.3.5	7.3.5 Summary . . . . .	358
<b>8</b>	<b>The Physics Definition of Consciousness</b>	<b>363</b>
8.1	8.1 Observer Model: Computational Structure (Agent) as Self-Referential Subsystem . . . . .	364
8.1.1	8.1.1 Mathematical Definition of Boundary: Markov Blanket . . . . .	370
8.1.2	8.1.2 Self-Reference and Internal Model: I Am What I Compute . . . . .	377
8.1.3	8.1.3 Resisting Heat Death: Schrödinger's Definition of Life . . . . .	384
8.1.4	8.1.4 Conclusion: Observers as Physics' "Solitons" . . . . .	390
8.2	8.2 Information Mass $M_I$ and Free Energy Minimization . . . . .	395
8.2.1	8.2.1 Information Mass $M_I$ : Physical Measure of Complexity . . . . .	399
8.2.2	8.2.2 Free Energy Principle: Thermodynamic Command of Observers . . . . .	408
8.2.3	8.2.3 Emergence of Meaning: From Bits to Value . . . . .	417
8.2.4	8.2.4 Summary . . . . .	421
8.3	8.3 Red Queen Effect and Thermodynamics: Why Does the Universe Not Have Heat Death? . . . . .	426
8.3.1	8.3.1 Relative Fitness and Arms Race . . . . .	432
8.3.2	8.3.2 Algorithmic Turmoil and Self-Organized Criticality . . . . .	439
8.3.3	8.3.3 Deep Connection Between Waste Heat and Cosmic Expansion . . . . .	445
8.3.4	8.3.4 Summary . . . . .	452
<b>V</b>	<b>Verification and Inference</b>	<b>457</b>
<b>9</b>	<b>Experimental Predictions</b>	<b>459</b>
9.1	9.1 Entanglement Gravity Detection Scheme in Microwave Cavities . . . . .	459
9.1.1	9.1.1 Experimental Design . . . . .	463
9.1.2	9.1.2 Theoretical Prediction . . . . .	467
9.2	9.2 Lorentz Violation Effects in Ultra-High-Energy Cosmic Rays . . . . .	470
9.2.1	9.2.1 Dispersion Relation of Light Speed . . . . .	472

9.2.2	9.2.2 Observational Opportunity . . . . .	474
9.2.3	9.2.3 Prediction . . . . .	476
9.3	9.3 Cosmological Drift of Fine Structure Constant . . . . .	479
9.3.1	9.3.1 Observational Scheme . . . . .	482
9.3.2	9.3.2 Prediction . . . . .	483
<b>10</b>	<b>Ultimate Questions of the Computational Universe</b>	<b>485</b>
10.1	10.1 The Universe's Source Code: How Was Rule $\hat{U}$ Selected? (Criticality Hypothesis)	486
10.1.1	10.1.1 Classification of Rule Space: Wolfram Classes and Langton Parameter $\lambda$ . . . . .	489
10.1.2	10.1.2 Criticality Hypothesis: Edge of Chaos . . . . .	497
10.1.3	10.1.3 Why Critical State? . . . . .	502
10.2	10.2 Physical Projection of Gödel's Incompleteness: The Boundary of Agnosticism	506
10.2.1	10.2.1 Death of Laplace's Demon: Computational Irreducibility . . . . .	511
10.2.2	10.2.2 Chaitin Incompleteness: Ultimate Resolution Limit of Theory . . .	521
10.2.3	10.2.3 Ultimate Task of Physics . . . . .	529
10.2.4	10.2.4 Conclusion . . . . .	531
10.3	10.3 Are We Players or NPCs? — On the Status of Free Will in Deterministic QCA	534
10.3.1	10.3.1 Freedom as Unpredictability: Deconstructing Illusion of Fatalism .	539
10.3.2	10.3.2 Reverse Causality and Teleology: Will as Higher-Order Causal Force	546
10.3.3	10.3.3 Source of Responsibility: You Are Your Algorithm . . . . .	554
10.3.4	10.3.4 Conclusion: Participatory Universe . . . . .	558
<b>A</b>	<b>Mathematical Foundations</b>	<b>563</b>
A.1	Appendix A: Mathematical Foundations . . . . .	564
A.1.1	A.1 Hilbert Space Structure of Discrete Quantum Mechanics . . . . .	567
A.1.2	A.2 Operator Algebra Spectral Theory . . . . .	574
A.1.3	A.3 Category Theory Foundations . . . . .	595
A.1.4	A.4 Information Geometry . . . . .	615
A.1.5	A.5 Graph Theory and Discrete Topology . . . . .	623
<b>B</b>	<b>QCA Simulation Guide</b>	<b>631</b>
B.1	Appendix B: QCA Simulation Guide . . . . .	632
B.1.1	B.1 Basic Architecture of the Simulator . . . . .	636
B.1.2	B.2 Evolution Algorithm: Split Operator Method . . . . .	640
B.1.3	B.3 Initial Conditions and Observation . . . . .	642
B.1.4	B.4 Experimental Script: Verifying Zitterbewegung . . . . .	643
B.1.5	B.5 Advanced Challenge: Curved Spacetime Simulation . . . . .	647
<b>C</b>	<b>Core Theorem Proof Collection</b>	<b>653</b>
C.1	Appendix C: Proofs of Core Theorems . . . . .	654
C.1.1	C.1 Operator Algebraic Proof of Light Path Conservation Theorem . . . .	658
C.1.2	C.2 Variational Derivation of Information-Gravity Variational Principle (IGVP) . . . . .	668
C.1.3	C.3 Trace-Class Counting Proof of Born Rule . . . . .	677
<b>D</b>	<b>Key Terminology Glossary</b>	<b>687</b>
D.1	Appendix D: Glossary of Key Terms . . . . .	688
D.1.1	A . . . . .	690
D.1.2	C . . . . .	694

D.1.3	I . . . . .	698
D.1.4	L . . . . .	705
D.1.5	O . . . . .	708
D.1.6	T . . . . .	710
D.1.7	U . . . . .	714
D.1.8	Z . . . . .	715



# Foreword: Occam’s Ultimate Razor

## Preface: Occam’s Ultimate Razor

The history of physics is a history of continuously searching for deeper “source code.”

Three hundred years ago, Newton made us believe that the universe is a precise clockwork, driven by the springs of absolute time and space; one hundred years ago, Einstein told us that the clockwork does not exist, that spacetime itself is a pliable body that can be bent; meanwhile, Bohr and Heisenberg discovered in the microscopic world that the essence of reality is a probability cloud of dice-throwing.

Today, we stand between two magnificent yet incompatible theoretical edifices: one is the geometric temple of **General Relativity**, smooth and deterministic, describing how gravity weaves spacetime; the other is the probabilistic maze of **Quantum Mechanics**, discrete and non-deterministic, describing how particles jump in Hilbert space. These two languages are immensely successful in their respective domains, but when we attempt to peer into the horizon of black holes or trace back to the moment of the Big Bang, they collide violently—geometry produces infinite singularities, probability leads to information loss.

This schism has persisted for nearly a century of patching, yet remains unhealed. Perhaps the problem is not that we are not smart enough to find answers within the existing framework, but that **the framework itself is wrong**. We have been trying to forcibly stuff “quantum” into the box of “geometry,” or quantize “gravity” as a field.

What if neither of these is the underlying truth?

This book proposes a radical, minimalist ontology: **Physical reality is not composed of matter, energy, or fields, but of “information” and “the process of information processing.”**

John Wheeler once proposed the famous “It from Bit.” This book pushes this idea to its logical extreme and endows it with dynamic form: **It from Qubit Processing**.

In this book, we make only one assumption, a single, irreducible axiom—the **Ultimate Axiom  $\Omega$** :

**The universe is a Quantum Cellular Automaton (QCA) operating on discrete lattice points, following local unitary evolution rules.**

Beyond this, there is nothing else. No presupposed spacetime background, no presupposed mass parameters, no presupposed speed of light limit, and no presupposed gravitational equations.

We invite readers to witness a logical magic trick: starting from this single seed alone, how the entire edifice of modern physics will be “grown” anew.

- We will prove that the **speed of light** is not a traffic speed limit set by God, but the maximum bandwidth for information transmission in the lattice network.
- We will prove that **Special Relativity** is merely a statistical result of resource allocation of information rates between “external displacement” and “internal computation”—the

**Light Path Conservation Law** we derive ( $v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2 = c^2$ ) exposes this deep mechanism nakedly in the mathematical sunlight.

- We will prove that **mass** is not an inherent property of matter, but information dead loops trapped at microscopic scales by topological structures; and **inertia** is the energy cost required for a system to maintain its existence when internal time is frozen.
- We will prove that **gravity** is not a fundamental interaction, but geometric distortion that must occur for the spacetime network to maintain consistency (unitarity) of information transmission—Einstein’s field equations are essentially the “equation of state” of the information manifold.

This is **Occam’s Ultimate Razor**. We shave away the illusion of continuity, shave away infinite divergences, shave away artificially introduced parameters. What remains is a crystal-clear universe composed purely of logic and computation.

In this universe, **observers** are no longer ghosts standing outside, but subroutines capable of self-referential computation; **consciousness** is no longer a mysterious byproduct, but the highest topological form in the information network.

This is a journey of reconstruction from “ontology” to “phenomenology.” For physicists accustomed to continuous spacetime and differential equations, the landscape here may seem unfamiliar or even angular. But I believe that when you reach the final chapter and see how discrete bits emerge into continuous reality, see how the familiar stars, gravity, and time are born from the void of computation, you will feel an unprecedented beauty of logic.

The universe is not merely like a computer. **The universe is computation itself.**

Let us begin running this code.

## Author’s Note

Many core derivations in this book (such as the Light Path Conservation Theorem, the volume conservation correction of optical metrics, and the combinatorial proof of Born’s rule) are based on a series of research papers by the author in recent years. To ensure reading fluency, complex mathematical proofs are placed in appendices or specific chapters, but this does not mean mathematics is unimportant. On the contrary, it is the rigidity of mathematics that supports the entire weight of this philosophical conception.

## Part I

# The Birth of Axioms



# Chapter 1

## The Necessity of Discrete Ontology

### 1.1 1.1 Zeno's Paradox and the Ghost of Continuum

We often think that "continuity" is the nature of reality. From smooth flowing water to continuously extending straight lines, the classical world seems to be composed of infinitely divisible matter and spacetime. This intuition is deeply rooted in our mathematical tools: the core of calculus is limits and infinitesimals.

However, when we try to peer into the deepest layers of physics with the "continuum" magnifying glass, we find it full of bizarre cracks. This chapter will peel away the illusion of continuity, revealing that discrete ontology is not only an assumption of computational cosmology, but the only cure for the deep contradictions of modern physics.

#### 1.1.1 1.1.1 Zeno's Dichotomy Paradox

In the 5th century BCE, Zeno of Elea proposed the famous "dichotomy paradox": If Achilles wants to go from point A to point B, he must first reach the midpoint  $C_1$ ; to reach  $C_1$ , he must first reach the midpoint  $C_2$  between A and  $C_1$ ... This infinite division continues, and Achilles seems unable to take even one step, because he must first complete infinitely many tasks.

Although classical calculus solved this problem mathematically using limit convergence ( $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1/2)^n = 1$ ), in physical ontology, Zeno's ghost has never truly left.

#### 1.1.2 1.1.2 The Information Density Catastrophe of Continuum

If we assume spacetime is continuous, i.e., a point set containing the cardinality of the real number set  $\mathbb{R}$ , then any finite spatial segment  $[0, L]$  contains uncountably infinitely many points. This means that a particle moving must "interact" or "update position" with every point on its path.

This hides an astonishing physical cost: **infinite information density**.

To precisely describe the position  $x$  of a point in the continuum, we need an infinitely long bit string (e.g.,  $x = 0.10110...$ ). If physical laws are local and depend on these precise positions, then any tiny volume contains infinite information. This might be tolerable in classical mechanics (we assume God has infinite hard drives), but in a universe combining Heisenberg's uncertainty principle with general relativity, this directly leads to disaster.

#### 1.1.3 1.1.3 Ultraviolet Divergence in Quantum Field Theory

Consider quantum field theory (QFT). In QFT, to calculate particle interactions, we must integrate over all possible momenta  $k$ . If space is continuous, momentum  $k$  can tend to infinity

(corresponding to wavelength  $\lambda \rightarrow 0$ ). This "ultraviolet divergence" forced physicists to invent renormalization techniques—artificially cutting off the high-energy part, retaining only the low-energy effective theory we can observe.

Renormalization is extremely successful computationally, but ontologically "ugly." It suggests there is a black hole at the bottom of our theory that we dare not touch. Feynman once admitted: "I think that's sweeping dust under the rug."

#### 1.1.4 1.1.4 The Solution of Discrete Ontology

Discrete ontology provides a radical solution: **What if Zeno was right?**

What if Achilles doesn't need to pass through infinitely many midpoints, but jumps from one square to the next like on a chessboard? What if at the deepest level, there is no "infinitesimal" distance, but only a smallest, indivisible "Planck lattice point"?

This leads to our first axiomatic foundation: **Physical reality has no infinitesimals.**

##### Corollary 1.1.1 (Natural Cutoff)

There exists a fundamental length scale  $l_P$  (Planck length) such that the spatial resolution  $\Delta x \geq l_P$  for any physical process.

##### Corollary 1.1.2 (Hilbert Space Finiteness)

For any finite volume  $V$ , the number of orthogonal basis states it contains  $N = \dim(\mathcal{H}_V)$  is a finite integer.

#### 1.1.5 1.1.5 The Necessity of Discreteness

Once we accept discreteness, all infinite divergences instantly disappear. Zeno's paradox is resolved—motion is not gliding on a continuum, but **state updates** between discrete states. Achilles only needs to complete finitely many updates to reach the destination.

Just as cursor movement on a computer screen looks smooth but is actually pixel (Pixel) on/off switching; our universe appears continuous only because our observation resolution is too coarse to detect the underlying granularity.

Physics does not need real numbers  $\mathbb{R}$ . Real numbers are merely statistical approximations of discrete grids at macroscopic scales. Just as continuous fluids in fluid mechanics are statistical averages of many discrete molecules, **spacetime continuum is merely the statistical average of discrete information flow.**

We are fundamentally expelling the "ghost of continuum" that has haunted physics for two thousand years. What remains is a clean, finite, computable universe.

## 1.2 1.2 Black Hole Entropy and Bekenstein Bound: The Universe as a Finite-Capacity Hard Drive

In the previous section, we pointed out the infinite divergences caused by the continuum hypothesis and proposed the necessity of natural cutoff for physical reality at the Planck scale. If ultraviolet divergence is merely theoretical "ugliness," then the discovery of black hole thermodynamics provides solid, even mandatory physical evidence for this discrete ontology.

### 1.2.1 1.2.1 Bekenstein's Insight: Does Information Have Volume?

In the early 1970s, when physicists were still debating whether black holes were merely mathematical singularities of general relativity, Jacob Bekenstein proposed a seemingly naive but highly subversive question: If I pour a cup of hot tea (with entropy) into a black hole, does the total entropy of the universe decrease? Because the black hole swallows everything, including information.

If the second law of thermodynamics is universal, black holes themselves must possess entropy.

Through thought experiments, Bekenstein discovered that black hole entropy  $S_{BH}$  should not be proportional to its volume (like ordinary thermodynamic systems), but proportional to the **surface area**  $A$  of its horizon. Subsequently, Stephen Hawking confirmed this relationship through semiclassical calculations and gave that famous formula:

$$S_{BH} = \frac{k_B c^3}{4G\hbar} A = \frac{A}{4l_P^2}$$

where  $l_P = \sqrt{G\hbar/c^3} \approx 1.6 \times 10^{-35}$  meters is the Planck length.

This formula is one of the most beautiful equations in the history of physics, unifying thermodynamics ( $k_B$ ), relativity ( $c$ ), gravity ( $G$ ), and quantum mechanics ( $\hbar$ ). But for our discussion, its most important significance lies in revealing the geometric nature of information.

### 1.2.2 1.2.2 Planck Pixels and Finite Capacity

Let us carefully examine the meaning of this formula. Entropy in information theory corresponds to the number of information bits ( $S = N \ln 2$ ). The Bekenstein-Hawking formula tells us that every  $4l_P^2$  area (four Planck areas) on the black hole horizon can store exactly 1 bit of information.

This is a startling conclusion: **Information is not a continuously distributed fluid, but discretely "paved" on the surface of spacetime.**

Furthermore, Bekenstein proposed the **Bekenstein Bound**: For any spherical spatial region containing energy  $E$  and radius  $R$ , the maximum entropy (i.e., maximum information)  $S_{max}$  it can contain is finite and satisfies:

$$S \leq \frac{2\pi k_B R E}{\hbar c}$$

When this region collapses into a black hole, entropy reaches the maximum value  $S = A/4l_P^2$ .

This means: **For any finite volume of space in the universe, no matter how we compress matter or energy into it, the total number of quantum states  $W = e^S$  it can contain is strictly a finite integer.**

### 1.2.3 1.2.3 The End of Continuum

If space were continuous, then even a tiny needle tip could theoretically contain infinite information (because we could infinitely subdivide coordinates). But the black hole entropy formula directly negates this. It shows that if we pile too much information in a region, space itself will "crash" (become a black hole) due to gravitational collapse, thus locking the information limit.

This provides the strongest physical support for our **discrete ontology**:

1. **Space is not a container, but a storage medium:** The geometric area of space directly corresponds to storage capacity (hard drive size). Planck length  $l_P$  is the smallest magnetic domain (Bit) of this cosmic hard drive.

1. **Holographic Principle:** Since the maximum information in a volume is determined by its surface area, this suggests that the "bulk" information of three-dimensional space can actually be losslessly encoded on a two-dimensional boundary. Like holograms, this dimensional reduction encoding is mathematically possible only in discrete systems (continuum cardinalities differ, preventing one-to-one mapping).

#### 1.2.4 1.2.4 Conclusion: The Universe as a Finite State Machine

Synthesizing the above derivations, we must accept an extremely profound conclusion: Our universe, at any given moment, for any finite observation horizon, contains a finite total amount of information.

If state space is finite and evolution rules are unitary (information conservation), then the universe is essentially equivalent to a **finite state machine** or a **quantum cellular automaton (QCA)** running on a huge but finite lattice.

Infinity not only does not exist physically, but is also redundant in information theory. Black holes are not merely celestial bodies; they are the "memory overflow" protection mechanism of this giant cosmic computer, reminding us that the granularity of physical reality has a bottom line.

In the next section, we will shift our gaze from macroscopic black holes to microscopic qubits, exploring how "matter" itself emerges from pure information.

### 1.3 1.3 Information Realism: Bits and Qubits as the Atoms of Matter

After revealing the pathology of continuum and the revelation of black hole entropy, we face an unavoidable ontological question: If the universe is not composed of continuous fields or matter, what are its "atoms"?

This section will establish the core viewpoint of this book—**Information Realism**. We will argue that the most fundamental constituent units of the physical universe are not electrons, quarks, or strings, but **Bits** and **Qubits**. Matter, energy, space, and time are all macroscopic phenomena emerging from interactions of these underlying information units.

#### 1.3.1 1.3.1 "It from Bit"

John Wheeler, in his visionary paper "Information, Physics, Quantum: The Search for Links," proposed the famous slogan: "It from Bit." He wrote:

"Every 'it'—every particle, every force field, even spacetime itself—derives its function, its meaning, its very existence entirely... from an apparatus-elicited answer to yes-or-no questions, binary choices, bits."

This view was radical at the time, but today it has become a cornerstone of quantum information physics. If we view the universe as a physical system, then the most fundamental description of this system's state is answering a series of "yes/no" questions (e.g., is spin up or down? Is lattice point empty or full?).



However, classical bits (0 or 1) are insufficient to describe the interference and entanglement we observe in the microscopic world. Therefore, we must upgrade Wheeler’s dictum to: **”It from Qubit.”**

### 1.3.2 1.3.2 Qubits: The Minimal Units of Physical Reality

In our QCA model, the universe is discretized into tiny cells. The most fundamental physical quantity carried by each cell is a **qubit**.

A qubit state  $|\psi\rangle$  is a unit vector in two-dimensional complex Hilbert space  $\mathbb{C}^2$ :

$$|\psi\rangle = \alpha|0\rangle + \beta|1\rangle$$

where  $|\alpha|^2 + |\beta|^2 = 1$ .

Why do we regard Qubits as more fundamental ”atoms” than electrons?

- (a) **Universality:** Any finite-dimensional quantum system (regardless of whether its physical carrier is photons, ions, or superconducting circuits) can be decomposed into tensor products of Qubits. Qubits are the universal currency of quantum information.
- (a) **Non-locality and Entanglement:** Two Qubits can form entangled states (such as Bell states), and this non-local correlation cannot be simulated by classical particles. As we will see in subsequent chapters, it is precisely this entanglement that ”stitches” discrete cells together, emerging as continuous spatial geometry.
  - i. **Holography:** A system containing  $N$  Qubits has a maximum information capacity strictly limited by  $N$ . This perfectly matches the ”finite capacity” we saw in black hole entropy.

Therefore, we define the bottom layer of physical reality no longer as  $x, y, z, t$ , but as state vectors  $|\Psi\rangle$  in Hilbert space. Spatial position  $x$  is merely the **index** of qubits in the lattice network, while time  $t$  is merely the **counter** of logic gate operations.

### 1.3.3 1.3.3 From Information to Matter: Reconstruction of Elementary Particles

If Qubits are bricks, how are the familiar electrons and photons ”built”?

In traditional physics, particles are viewed as point-like entities moving in spacetime. But in the QCA framework, **particles are excitation patterns in information networks**.

Imagine a two-dimensional grid filled with Qubits.

- **Vacuum** corresponds to some low-entanglement ground state (e.g., all spins down  $|00\dots 0\rangle$ ).
- **Photons** correspond to a ”flip” wave propagating on the grid (e.g.,  $|010\dots 0\rangle \rightarrow |001\dots 0\rangle$ ). Since there is no mechanism preventing this flip’s transmission, it propagates at maximum speed (speed of light).
  - **Electrons** correspond to a complex **topological knot**. Like a knot on a rope, it is a local information structure that not only contains flips but also phase winding. This winding prevents it from dissipating at light speed, forcing it to maintain its existence in place—this is the origin of **mass**.

In this picture, matter is not a "thing" but a "process." An electron is not a small ball named "electron"; it is a self-maintaining, self-referential information vortex in the Qubit ocean.

### 1.3.4 1.3.4 Conclusion: Computational Ontology

At this point, we have completed a thorough reconstruction of physics ontology:

- i. **Dematerialization:** There is no "hard" matter, only soft information.
- i. **De-backgrounding:** There is no a priori spacetime stage, only interrelations (entanglement) between qubits.
- A. **Discretization:** There are no infinitesimals, only finite logical steps.

We no longer ask "what is the universe made of," but "how does the universe compute."

After establishing this ontological foundation, we can finally take the most crucial step—writing down the single law governing the operation of all these Qubits. This is the theme of the next chapter: **The Ultimate Axiom  $\Omega$ .**

## Chapter 2

# The Ultimate Axiom $\Omega$

### 2.1 2.1 Axiom Statement: The Universe is a Quantum Cellular Automaton (QCA) Operating on Discrete Lattice Points Following Local Unitary Evolution Rules

This is the core of this book, and the only foundation stone for constructing the entire edifice of physics.

We will abandon all complex, phenomenological physical assumptions (such as mass, charge, spacetime curvature, wave function collapse, etc.), retaining only the purest computational structure.

#### Ultimate Axiom $\Omega$ (The Axiom of Unitary QCA)

Physical reality  $\Psi$  is equivalent to a quantum information processing system defined on a discrete lattice graph  $\Lambda$ , following local unitary evolution rules  $\hat{U}$ .

Formally expressed as a triple  $(\Lambda, \mathcal{H}, \hat{U})$ :

1. **State Space**  $(\Lambda, \mathcal{H})$ : The universe is a countable graph  $\Lambda$ , where each node  $x \in \Lambda$  is associated with a finite-dimensional complex Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}_x \cong \mathbb{C}^d$  (i.e., qudit). The state space of the entire system is the tensor product of local spaces  $\mathcal{H}_{total} = \bigotimes_{x \in \Lambda} \mathcal{H}_x$ .
2. **Evolution Rule**  $(\hat{U})$ : The system's evolution with discrete time steps  $t \in \mathbb{Z}$  is driven by a global operator  $\hat{U}$ :

$$|\Psi(t+1)\rangle = \hat{U}|\Psi(t)\rangle$$

#### 3. Constraints:

\* **Unitarity**:  $\hat{U}^\dagger \hat{U} = \mathbb{I}$ . This means information (modulus of quantum states) is strictly conserved during evolution, neither created nor destroyed.

\* **Locality**:  $\hat{U}$  can be decomposed as a product of local operators  $\hat{U} = \prod_k \hat{U}_k$  (or its finite-depth circuit), and each  $\hat{U}_k$  acts only on finitely many adjacent nodes on  $\Lambda$ . This means no action at a distance; information propagation speed is limited by lattice connectivity.

\* **Translation Invariance (Homogeneity)** (optional but usually assumed): Evolution rules  $\hat{U}_x$  are identical across the entire graph  $\Lambda$  (except possible boundary conditions). This corresponds to the universality of physical laws.

---

This axiom seems simple but contains astonishing power. It not only defines what "existence" is (quantum information), but also defines what "change" is (unitary computation).

In the next few sections, we will deeply analyze each clause of this axiom, explaining **why** the universe must be this way, not that way. We will see that these seemingly abstract mathematical requirements actually directly correspond to familiar physical iron laws—conservation of probability, causality, and conservation of energy.

## 2.2 Why Unitarity? — Conservation of Probability and Logical Consistency

When we claim the universe is a **unitary** QCA, we are actually making a commitment about the deepest layer of existence: **information conservation**.

In standard quantum mechanics textbooks, unitarity is usually expressed as an abstract mathematical property: evolution operator  $U$  must satisfy  $U^\dagger U = \mathbb{I}$ . For physics students, this means the modulus squared of the wave function (sum of probabilities) is always 1. Without unitarity, particles might vanish into thin air, or the sum of probabilities might become 1.5, destroying all statistical predictive power.

But in our discrete ontology, unitarity is not merely "conservation of probability"; it is the physical embodiment of **logical consistency**.

### 2.2.1 Reversibility and the Eternity of Information

A core property of unitary transformations is **reversibility**. If  $U$  is unitary, then the inverse operator  $U^{-1} = U^\dagger$  necessarily exists and is also unitary.

This means that given the current state  $|\Psi(t)\rangle$ , we can not only uniquely predict the future  $|\Psi(t+1)\rangle$ , but also uniquely trace back the past  $|\Psi(t-1)\rangle$ . **The current state contains all information about past and future.**

What happens if the universe is not unitary?

- A. **Information Loss (Non-injective):** If two different states  $|A\rangle$  and  $|B\rangle$  evolve to the same state  $|C\rangle$ , then when we are in  $|C\rangle$ , memory of the past is permanently erased. This corresponds to irreversible processes (entropy increase) in thermodynamics. But at the fundamental physics level, if we believe microscopic laws are symmetric, such erasure is forbidden.
- A. **Information Created from Nothing (Non-surjective):** If some state  $|D\rangle$  has no predecessor, how did it "suddenly appear"? This violates the continuity of causality.

Therefore, **the unitarity axiom is equivalent to the "law of information conservation."** In this universe, no bit is truly deleted, and no bit is created from nothing. The macroscopic "forgetting" or "dissipation" we see is merely information transferring from local degrees of freedom to environmental degrees of freedom we cannot

track (entanglement diffusion). For the wave function of the entire universe, entropy is always constant (and zero, if we start from a pure state).

### 2.2.2 2.2.2 The Rigidity of Logic

Looking deeper, unitarity ensures the **rigidity** of physical logic.

In the derivation of the Light Path Conservation Theorem, we see that the relation  $c^2 = v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2$  directly stems from unitary decomposition of operators. If non-unitary evolution were allowed, this "circle" would deform, causing physical constants (such as light speed  $c$  or Planck constant  $\hbar$ ) to fluctuate with time or state.

A non-unitary universe is a logically "soft" universe. In that universe,  $1 + 1$  might equal 2 today and 1.9 tomorrow. This is not only a disaster for physics, but also for mathematics.

By forcing  $\hat{U}$  to be unitary, we are actually saying: **The underlying logic of the universe is unbreakable.** No matter how violent the interactions (black hole mergers, Big Bang), the underlying Hilbert space structure remains unchanged, angles between vectors (orthogonality) remain unchanged. This geometric rigidity is the fundamental reason we can describe the physical world with mathematics.

### 2.2.3 2.2.3 Reconciliation with the Measurement Problem

Readers might ask: "If we see wave function collapse (non-unitary process), how can we say the universe is unitary?"

This is exactly what we will solve in **Chapter 7**. Here, we emphasize: **The unitarity claimed by Axiom  $\Omega$  is global, microscopic unitarity.**

The so-called "non-unitary measurement" is only because the observer is also part of the system (subsystem), and can only see a tiny slice of the entire universe's Hilbert space. When information flows out of this slice (into the environment), unitarity seems broken to the observer. But this is a perspective illusion, like feeling centrifugal force in a rotating room.

As long as we expand our view to the entire universe (or a sufficiently large closed system), unitarity is perfectly restored.

Therefore, insisting on the unitarity axiom is insisting on the **many-worlds (or many-histories)** perspective—all possible historical branches truly exist and evolve in parallel, together maintaining the modulus conservation of the entire universe's wave function.

After establishing that "the universe does not forget," the next question is: How does the universe know "where is where"? This is the theme of the next section: **Locality**.

### 2.3 2.3 Why Locality? — Avoiding "God's Eye View" and Action at a Distance

After establishing "unitarity" as the rigid skeleton of cosmic logic, we face a second fundamental question: How is this universe's structure organized?

In the Ultimate Axiom  $\Omega$ , we force the evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  to be **local**. This means that within each time step  $\Delta t$ , any cell (Qubit) can only interact with cells directly adjacent to it on the lattice graph  $\Lambda$ . Why must it be local? Why can't we allow a cell to instantly exchange information with a cell at the other end of the universe? This is not just to conform to the empirical facts of special relativity, but a necessary prerequisite for logically constructing a **self-consistent, evolvable universe**.

#### 2.3.1 2.3.1 The End of God's Eye View: Full Connection Means No Structure

Imagine a **non-local** universe. In this universe, there exists a direct interaction channel between any two particles. No matter how far apart they are (assuming the concept of "distance" still exists), a flip of one particle can directly change another particle's state in the next instant.

In graph-theoretic language, this corresponds to a **complete graph**. If the universe is fully connected, then:

- B. **Geometry Disappears:** Since any two points are "adjacent," the concept of "space" loses meaning. There is no "near" and "far," no "inside" and "outside"; the entire universe collapses into a zero-dimensional point.
- C. **Complexity Collapse:** To calculate the next state, every cell needs to know the current state of all other cells in the entire universe. This means every local computation requires infinite (or universe-scale) information input and processing capability. This actually requires every particle to possess a "God's eye view."

Therefore, **locality is not a limitation, but creation**. It is precisely by limiting the range of interactions (cutting off the vast majority of connections) that the universe acquires topological structure, dimensions, and so-called "space."

**Space is essentially the sparsity of interactions.**

#### 2.3.2 2.3.2 The Birth of Geometry: Distance as Delay

Once we impose locality constraints, **maximum signal propagation speed (light speed  $c$ )** automatically emerges as a logical necessity. In QCA, information can only propagate to neighbors within one step  $\Delta t$ . To propagate to a node  $N$  steps away,  $N$  time steps are necessary.

$$\text{Distance} \equiv \text{Minimum Communication Time}$$

This reveals the ontological definition of light speed  $c$  in physics:

**$c$  is not the speed limit of object motion; it is the conversion factor for causal chain extension.**

If we allow non-local action (action at a distance), it means  $c \rightarrow \infty$ . In this case, causality would no longer have temporal order protection, and grandfather paradoxes would become inevitable. The locality axiom is actually the **guardian of causality**. It ensures events occur sequentially and influence transmission has a process. As physicist John Wheeler said: "Time is to prevent everything from happening at once; space is to prevent everything from happening in the same place."

### 2.3.3 2.3.3 Clarification: Quantum Non-locality vs. Dynamical Locality

Here we must clarify a concept that often confuses beginners: the difference between **Bell Non-locality** and **Dynamical Locality**.

Entangled states in quantum mechanics do exhibit non-local correlations—measuring one particle seems to instantly determine another particle's state. Does this violate our locality axiom?

**The answer is: No violation.**

- D. **Dynamical Locality (what we insist on):** This refers to the structure of the Hamiltonian or evolution operator. In QCA,  $\hat{H} = \sum \hat{h}_{i,i+1}$ . This ensures **interactions** only occur between neighbors. You cannot "touch" a distant particle.
- E. **Bell Non-locality (of measurement results):** This refers to correlations of **states**. Although two particles are far apart, they share a history (once had local interaction somewhere, then separated). This correlation is a **pre-established resource**, not **instantaneous communication**.

In a QCA universe, entanglement can exist between arbitrarily distant nodes (as long as they have causal connection in the past), but **utilizing** this entanglement to transmit information and produce physical effects must follow the point-by-point local rules.

This is like two people each taking a walkie-talkie to opposite ends of Earth. The walkie-talkies (entanglement) connect them, but radio waves (interactions) must traverse space at light speed.

### 2.3.4 2.3.4 Conclusion: A Universe Without Supermen

The locality axiom is actually a **humble** declaration of physics. It states:

- There is no "control center" in the universe.
- Every cell is equal and autonomous.
  - \* Macroscopic order is not imposed top-down by global commands, but emerges bottom-up from countless local microscopic interactions.

This is not only a principle of physics, but also the fundamental reason complex systems (such as life, brains, society) can exist.

At this point, we have established the universe's **software logic (unitarity)** and **hardware architecture (locality)**. In the next section, we will formalize these concepts and write down the complete mathematical definition of the ultimate axiom.

## 2.4 2.4 Formal Definition: Graph $\Lambda$ , Hilbert Space $\mathcal{H}$ , and Update Operator $\hat{U}$

In the previous section, we established the universe's information-conserving logic through "unitarity" and endowed the universe with spatial structure and causal constraints through "locality." Now, we must transform these physical intuitions into rigorous mathematical language. This section will provide the complete mathematical formal definition of the Ultimate Axiom  $\Omega$ ; this triple  $(\Lambda, \mathcal{H}, \hat{U})$  will become the only axiomatic foundation we are allowed to use in all subsequent derivations in this book.

### 2.4.1 2.4.1 Definition 2.4.1: Discrete Geometric Background $\Lambda$

We define "space" as a countable, infinite (or extremely large finite) graph.

#### Definition (Lattice Graph $\Lambda$ ):

Let  $\Lambda = (V, E)$  be an undirected graph, where  $V$  is the vertex (cell) set and  $E$  is the edge (adjacency relation) set. We require  $\Lambda$  to satisfy the following properties:

1. **Regularity:** The degree of each vertex is finite and constant, denoted  $k$ . This corresponds to spatial homogeneity.
2. **Connectivity:** The graph is connected, i.e., there exists a finite-length path between any two points.
3. **Discrete Metric:** Define the distance  $d(x, y)$  between two points  $x, y \in V$  as the number of edges in the shortest path connecting them.

*Note:* The simplest example is the  $D$ -dimensional integer lattice  $\mathbb{Z}^D$ , but this is not the only choice. Penrose tilings or triangulations of Regge differential geometry are also allowed. But in elementary derivations of this book, we usually default to  $\Lambda \cong \mathbb{Z}^3$  to simplify discussion.

### 2.4.2 2.4.2 Definition 2.4.2: Quantum State Space $\mathcal{H}$

We define "matter" as quantum information distributed on the graph.

#### Definition (Local and Global Hilbert Spaces):

1. **Local Space:** For each vertex  $x \in V$ , associate a finite-dimensional complex Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}_x \cong \mathbb{C}^d$ .  $d$  is called the local dimension; for qubit systems,  $d = 2$ .



2. **Global Space:** The Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}_{\text{total}}$  of the entire system is the tensor product of all local spaces:

$$\mathcal{H}_{\text{total}} = \bigotimes_{x \in V} \mathcal{H}_x$$

3. **Basis:** An orthonormal basis of the entire system can be expressed as  $|\mathbf{s}\rangle = \bigotimes_x |s_x\rangle$ , where  $s_x \in \{0, 1, \dots, d-1\}$  is the classical state of node  $x$ .

*Note:* Since  $V$  may be infinite, rigorous mathematical treatment requires infinite tensor product structures of von Neumann algebras or  $C^*$  algebras. But physically, we always focus on finite excitation states, so we can treat it as a Hilbert space with countable basis.

### 2.4.3 2.4.3 Definition 2.4.3: Dynamical Evolution $\hat{U}$

We define "time" as discrete update steps  $t \in \mathbb{Z}$ , and "physical laws" as global update operators.

**Definition (Global Unitary Evolution  $\hat{U}$ ):**

The system's state evolves with discrete time steps  $t$ :

$$|\Psi(t+1)\rangle = \hat{U}|\Psi(t)\rangle$$

where operator  $\hat{U}$  must satisfy:

1. **Unitarity:**  $\hat{U}^\dagger \hat{U} = \hat{U} \hat{U}^\dagger = \mathbb{I}$ .
2. **Causal Locality:**  $\hat{U}$  has a finite-depth quantum circuit structure. Specifically,  $\hat{U}$  can be decomposed as a product of local gates:

$$\hat{U} = \prod_{\text{partitions } P} \left( \bigotimes_{C \in P} \hat{u}_C \right)$$

where each  $\hat{u}_C$  acts only on nodes within the neighborhood  $\mathcal{N}(x)$  centered at  $x$  with radius  $r$  (interaction range).

3. **Translation Invariance** (for  $\Lambda = \mathbb{Z}^D$ ): Let translation operator be  $\hat{T}_{\mathbf{a}}$ , then  $[\hat{U}, \hat{T}_{\mathbf{a}}] = 0$ . This means physical laws are identical everywhere in space.

### 2.4.4 2.4.4 Physical Interpretation: Definition of Light Speed $c$

In this formal system, the natural constant  $c$  (light speed) is no longer an empirically measured value, but a **derived quantity** defined by graph structure and update rules.

Within one time step  $\Delta t = 1$ , local operator  $\hat{u}_C$  can only propagate information (entanglement) from node  $x$  to its neighbors  $y \in \mathcal{N}(x)$ .

Let lattice spacing be  $a = l_P$  (Planck length), then the maximum propagation speed of information is strictly defined as:

$$c \equiv \frac{a}{\Delta t} \times r$$

where  $r$  is the interaction radius of local gates (usually  $r = 1$ ).

This is the microscopic origin of light cones in physics: **It is the causal boundary defined by the connectivity of local logic gates.** Any attempt to exceed this speed for information transmission is equivalent to requiring  $\hat{U}$  to contain non-local long-range connections, thus violating the locality definition.

At this point, we have completed the complete definition of the universe's "source code." These three definitions—**graph, state, operator**—constitute the entire axiomatic foundation for deriving all physical phenomena. Beyond this, there is nothing else.

In the following chapters, we will start this automaton and see how it emerges the miracles of special relativity from these simple rules.

## Part II

# The Emergence of Spacetime



## Chapter 3

# Causality and the Speed of Light

### 3.1 3.1 The Discrete Origin of Light Cones: Deriving Maximum Signal Velocity $c$ from Lattice Hopping

In the Ultimate Axiom  $\Omega$ , we only defined a static graph  $\Lambda$  and a dynamic rule  $\hat{U}$ . We did not presuppose "relativity," "Lorentz symmetry," or that sacred constant  $c \approx 299,792,458$  meters/second.

However, remarkably, as soon as this automaton starts running, the **light cone** structure automatically emerges like crystal growth from the logical foundation. The core of special relativity—causality and limiting velocity—is not traffic laws imposed by God on the universe, but inevitable properties of discrete information processing systems.

This chapter will prove: **Light speed  $c$  is merely the ratio of the "grid constant" and "refresh rate" of spacetime lattice points.**

In Newton's continuous spacetime, instantaneous action at a distance is mathematically allowed. Forces can propagate at infinite speed; causality has no boundary. But in a discrete QCA universe, this is strictly forbidden by the "locality" clause in Axiom  $\Omega$ .

#### 3.1.1 3.1.1 Definition of Influence: Commutators as Causal Detectors

First, we need to physically define what "influence" or "signal" means. In quantum mechanics, if two observable operators  $\hat{A}$  and  $\hat{B}$  commute (i.e.,  $[\hat{A}, \hat{B}] = 0$ ), then measuring  $\hat{A}$  does not interfere with the statistical distribution of  $\hat{B}$ , and vice versa. This means there is no causal connection between them.

Conversely, if  $[\hat{A}, \hat{B}] \neq 0$ , it indicates that one opera-

tion interferes with another's result; information has been transmitted between them.

Therefore, we can define:

**Definition (Causal Connection):**

If for local operator  $\hat{O}_x$  at location  $x$  and local operator  $\hat{O}_y$  at location  $y$ , in the Heisenberg picture they satisfy:

$$[\hat{O}_x(t), \hat{O}_y(0)] \neq 0$$

then event  $(y, 0)$  causally influences event  $(x, t)$ .

### 3.1.2 Strict Light Cone Theorem

Now, we prove that in QCA defined by Axiom  $\Omega$ , the propagation range of such influence is strictly limited.

**Theorem 3.1 (Strict Causal Bound of QCA)**

Let the graph distance on QCA graph  $\Lambda$  be  $d(x, y)$ , and the interaction radius of evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  be  $r$ .

For any two nodes  $x, y$  and any time step  $t \geq 0$ , if:

$$d(x, y) > r \cdot t$$

then necessarily:

$$[\hat{O}_x(t), \hat{O}_y(0)] = 0$$

**Proof (Mathematical Induction):**

**Heisenberg Evolution:**  $\hat{O}_x(t) = (\hat{U}^\dagger)^t \hat{O}_x(0) \hat{U}^t$ .

This is equivalent to operator evolution backward in time.

**Base Case ( $t = 0$ ):** If  $x \neq y$ , according to the tensor product structure of local Hilbert spaces, operators on different lattice points naturally commute.  $[\hat{O}_x(0), \hat{O}_y(0)] = 0$ . Theorem holds.

**Single-Step Diffusion ( $t = 1$ ):**

Consider  $\hat{O}_x(1) = \hat{U}^\dagger \hat{O}_x(0) \hat{U}$ .

Since  $\hat{U}$  is a product of local gates  $\hat{u}_C$ , only those local gates covering node  $x$  will have non-trivial action on  $\hat{O}_x$ .

The support set of these gates is at most the neighborhood  $\mathcal{N}_r(x)$  centered at  $x$  with radius  $r$ .

Therefore, the evolved operator  $\hat{O}_x(1)$ , though formally more complex, still only contains

algebraic combinations of operators defined within  $\mathcal{N}_r(x)$ .

For any  $y \notin \mathcal{N}_r(x)$  (i.e.,  $d(x, y) > r$ ),  $\hat{O}_x(1)$  and  $\hat{O}_y(0)$  act on disjoint Hilbert subspaces, hence they commute.

**Inductive Step:**

Assume for  $t = k$ , the support set  $\text{supp}(\hat{O}_x(k)) \subseteq \mathcal{N}_{k \cdot r}(x)$ .

At  $t = k + 1$ ,  $\hat{O}_x(k + 1) = \hat{U}^\dagger \hat{O}_x(k) \hat{U}$ .

Applying single-step evolution logic again, the support set expands outward by at most  $r$ .

Therefore  $\text{supp}(\hat{O}_x(k + 1)) \subseteq \mathcal{N}_{(k+1)r}(x)$ .

Conclusion: For any point  $y$  with distance  $d(x, y) > r \cdot t$ , its operator  $\hat{O}_y$  lies outside the support set of  $\hat{O}_x(t)$ , so they necessarily commute.

**Q.E.D.**

### 3.1.3 3.1.3 Ontological Definition of Light Speed $c$

The above theorem gives a purely graph-theoretic and logical step number inequality:

$$\text{Causal Distance} \leq r \times \text{Time Steps}$$

To connect with physical reality, we need to introduce **units**.

- \* Let the physical spacing between lattice points be Planck length  $l_P$ .
- \* Let the physical duration of one logical update be Planck time  $t_P$ .

Physical distance  $D = d(x, y) \cdot l_P$ , physical time  $T = t \cdot t_P$ .

The inequality becomes:

$$D/l_P \leq r \cdot (T/t_P)$$

$$D/T \leq r \cdot \frac{l_P}{t_P}$$

We define this insurmountable speed limit as  $c$ :

$$c \equiv r \frac{l_P}{t_P}$$

From this perspective, light speed  $c$  is no longer a mysterious constant; it is the **aspect ratio of spacetime pixels**.

- **If  $c$  were infinite:** It would mean  $t_P \rightarrow 0$  or  $l_P \rightarrow \infty$ , corresponding to fully connected graphs or instantaneous computation, violating our discrete axiom.
- **If  $c$  were variable:** It would mean the lattice structure is non-uniform (non-translationally invariant). Under our uniform QCA assumption,  $c$  must be a universal constant.

### 3.1.4 3.1.4 Geometrization of Causality

Theorem 3.1 not only defines speed, but also defines **geometric structure**.

On graph  $\Lambda \times \mathbb{Z}$  (spacetime lattice), all point pairs  $(y, 0)$  satisfying  $d(x, y) \leq r \cdot t$  constitute the **past light cone** of point  $(x, t)$ . Only events within this light cone can possibly be "causes" of  $(x, t)$ .

Conversely, all point pairs  $(z, t)$  satisfying  $d(x, z) \leq r \cdot t$  constitute the **future light cone** of  $(x, 0)$ . Only events within this light cone can be "influenced" by  $(x, 0)$ .

In regions outside the light cone (space-like separation),  $[\hat{O}_x, \hat{O}_z] \equiv 0$ . This means:

**For spacelike separated events, there is no objective temporal order.** Because there is no causal connection between them, which comes first or second will not lead to logical contradictions. This is precisely the microscopic origin of "relativity of simultaneity" in special relativity.

### 3.1.5 3.1.5 Summary

Starting from Axiom  $\Omega$ , without invoking any relativistic assumptions, we "derived" the light cone structure and limiting velocity merely by analyzing operator diffusion on discrete lattices.

In this universe, **photons** are not special particles; they are **informa-**



**tion wave packets that exactly reach the lattice propagation bandwidth limit.** They are the exposed skeleton of causal chains.

After establishing the existence of  $c$ , the next question naturally is: What happens if objects try to move as fast as light? This leads to the most core theorem of this book—Light Path Conservation.

### 3.2 3.2 Light Path Conservation Theorem: Proving $v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2 = c^2$ from Unitarity

In the previous section, we established light speed  $c$  as the maximum bandwidth (causal boundary) for information propagation in the universe. However, special relativity is not just about light speed limits, but about **what happens when objects approach light speed.** Why does time dilate? Why does mass increase? Traditional physics textbooks attribute these effects to the geometric properties of Lorentz transformations, i.e., spacetime metrics must maintain  $ds^2 = -c^2 dt^2 + dx^2$  invariant. But this is only a description of phenomena, not an explanation. We must ask: **Why** must the metric be this way?

In this section, we will prove a more fundamental theorem—**Light Path Conservation Theorem (Theorem of Information Celerity Conservation)**. We will show that all strange effects of special relativity are merely inevitable mathematical consequences of **unitarity (information conservation)** allocating resources between space and internal states.

### 3.2.1 3.2.1 Geometric Definition of Information Rate

In QCA's Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}$ , physical states  $|\Psi(t)\rangle$  evolve with discrete time  $t$ . How do we define the "speed" of this state evolution?

In quantum mechanics, the natural distance measuring the difference between two states is the **Fubini-Study metric**. For unitary evolution driven by Hamiltonian  $\hat{H}$ , the evolution rate of state vectors in Hilbert space (i.e., the rate of orthogonalization with other states) is proportional to energy uncertainty or average energy. For basic excitations (single particles) of QCA, the energy scale is set by Planck frequency  $\omega_P$ . Since evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  is strictly unitary ( $\hat{U}^\dagger \hat{U} = \mathbb{I}$ ), state vectors maintain constant modulus during evolution. This means **state vectors always rotate at constant "angular velocity" in Hilbert space**.

We define this constant total information update rate as  $c$ .

**Definition (Total Information Rate):**

For any basic excitation in the universe, the modulus of its Fubini-Study evolution rate in the full Hilbert space (including position and internal degrees of freedom) is constant  $c$ .

$$\|\mathbf{v}_{total}\| \equiv c$$

### 3.2.2 3.2.2 Orthogonal Decomposition and Pythagorean Theorem

Now, we project this total rate  $\mathbf{v}_{total}$  onto two observable dimensions in the physical world.

According to Axiom  $\Omega$ , Hilbert space decomposes as  $\mathcal{H}_{total} = \mathcal{H}_{position} \otimes \mathcal{H}_{internal}$ . Correspondingly, evolution generators (ef-

fective Hamiltonian  $\hat{H}_{eff}$ ) also consist of two parts:

**Translation Generator ( $\hat{P}$ ):** Responsible for changing particle position index  $|x\rangle \rightarrow |x+1\rangle$  on lattice graph  $\Lambda$ . This corresponds to macroscopic **momentum**.

**Internal Rotation Generator ( $\hat{M}$ ):** Responsible for changing particle internal states (such as spin flips, phase rotations). This corresponds to macroscopic **rest mass**.

In a one-dimensional Dirac-QCA model (simplest fermion model), the effective Hamiltonian is written as:

$$\hat{H}_{eff} = c\hat{P} \otimes \hat{\sigma}_z + m_0 c^2 \hat{I} \otimes \hat{\sigma}_x$$

where  $\hat{\sigma}_z, \hat{\sigma}_x$  are Pauli matrices, acting on internal chirality space respectively.

Here appears a decisive algebraic property: **Anti-commutation**.

$$\{\hat{\sigma}_z, \hat{\sigma}_x\} = \hat{\sigma}_z \hat{\sigma}_x + \hat{\sigma}_x \hat{\sigma}_z = 0$$

Geometrically, anti-commutation of operators means the evolution directions they generate are **strictly orthogonal**. Just as  $x$ -axis and  $y$ -axis are perpendicular in Euclidean space, in Hilbert space, "changing position" and "changing internal state" are two non-interfering evolution dimensions.

Therefore, the square of total evolution rate (corresponding to energy squared  $E^2 \propto \langle \hat{H}^2 \rangle$ ) can be simply obtained by calculating the sum of squares of operators:

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{H}^2 &= (c\hat{P}\sigma_z + m_0 c^2 \sigma_x)^2 \\ &= c^2 \hat{P}^2 \sigma_z^2 + m_0^2 c^4 \sigma_x^2 + c m_0 c^2 \hat{P}(\sigma_z \sigma_x + \sigma_x \sigma_z) \\ &= (c^2 P^2 + m_0^2 c^4) \mathbb{I} \quad (\text{because } \sigma_i^2 = \mathbb{I}, \{\sigma_z, \sigma_x\} = 0) \end{aligned}$$

We divide both sides by total energy squared  $E^2$  (normalization) and introduce velocity definitions:

**External velocity**  $v_{ext} \equiv c^2 P/E$   
(group velocity  $dE/dP$ )

**Internal velocity**  $v_{int} \equiv m_0 c^3/E$   
(contribution rate of internal oscillation to total energy)

We obtain:

$$1 = \frac{v_{ext}^2}{c^2} + \frac{v_{int}^2}{c^2}$$

Rearranging, we get one of the most important theorems of this book:

**Theorem 3.2 (Light Path Conservation Theorem):**

In a unitary QCA universe, for any particle, external displacement velocity  $v_{ext}$  and internal evolution velocity  $v_{int}$  satisfy:

$$v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2 = c^2$$

### 3.2.3 Physical Interpretation: Demystifying Special Relativity

This simple Pythagorean theorem completely removes the mystery of special relativity. It tells us that physical entity evolution is a **zero-sum game**.

**Resource Mutual Exclusivity:** Your total "computational power" is finite ( $c$ ). If you use computational power to change position ( $v_{ext}$  increases),

you must reduce computational power for internal state updates ( $v_{int}$  decreases).

**Essence of Time Dilation:** So-called "time dilation" is essentially **reduction of internal computation rate**. When you move at near light speed ( $v_{ext} \rightarrow c$ ), your  $v_{int}$  is forced to approach 0. Your internal clock (metabolism, atomic vibrations, thought processes) slows down due to lack of "computational quota." This is not because time itself slows down, but because **you're busy traveling, with no time to age**.

**Definition of Mass:** In this framework, **rest mass**  $m_0$  is given clear geometric meaning—it is the internal oscillation frequency of particles at rest ( $v_{ext} = 0$ ). It is the "inherent cost" of particle existence.

**Essence of Photons:** Photons have no mass because they are pure external displacement modes. They have no projection in internal space ( $v_{int} \equiv 0$ ), so they must use all quota for displacement, resulting in  $v_{ext} \equiv c$ .

### 3.2.4 3.2.4 Conclusion

**Relativity is not about spacetime axioms, but about statistics of information processing.** Einstein's Lorentz factor  $\gamma = 1/\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}$  is merely

another way of writing the Pythagorean theorem  $\sin \theta = \sqrt{1 - \cos^2 \theta}$ . In this discrete, unitary universe, every particle is a pointer dancing on the information rate circle. In the next section, we will use this theorem to directly derive the specific form of Lorentz transformations and show how four-dimensional spacetime geometry emerges from this two-dimensional velocity constraint.

### 3.3 Derivation of Lorentz Transformation: No Geometry, Only Statistics of Resource Allocation

In the previous section, we established the **Light Path Conservation Theorem**: For any particle, its external displacement velocity  $v_{ext}$  and internal evolution velocity  $v_{int}$  satisfy  $v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2 = c^2$ . This is an equation about resource allocation in information processing. Now, we face the greatest challenge: **How to derive the complete Lorentz transformation solely from this resource allocation equation?**

Usually, Lorentz transformations are viewed as results of spacetime geometric rotation ( $SO(1, 3)$  symmetry of Minkowski space). But in our dis-

crete ontology, we do not presuppose continuous space-time geometry. All we have are counters on lattices. We will prove that Lorentz transformations are essentially **statistical results of two observers in different reference frames decomposing the same conserved information flow differently**.

### 3.3.1 3.3.1 Definition of Reference Frames: Who Is Watching?

What is a "reference frame" in QCA?

**Rest Frame (Laboratory Frame  $S$ ):** This is the perspective of the lattice background itself. We can imagine "daemon processes" distributed across lattice points, synchronized with each other (based on lattice connectivity), recording global update steps  $t$  and lattice coordinates  $x$ . For frame  $S$ , the maximum signal speed is obviously  $c$ .

**Moving Frame (Co-moving Frame  $S'$ ):** This is the perspective of a local observer attached to a particle (or spaceship) moving through the lattice at speed  $v$ . This observer carries their own internal clock (based on  $v_{int}$ ) and measuring rod (based on signal round trips).

Our task is to establish the mapping relationship between  $(t, x)$  and  $(t', x')$ .

### 3.3.2 Time Dilation: Relativity of Counting

Consider a particle  $P$  moving at constant speed  $v$  relative to the lattice (i.e.,  $v_{ext} = v$ ).

**In Co-moving Frame  $S'$ :**

The particle considers itself at rest ( $v'_{ext} = 0$ ). According to the Light Path Conservation Axiom, it must use all light path quota for internal evolution.

$$v'_{int} = c$$

This means the particle's internal clock (proper time  $\tau$ ) runs at maximum efficiency: for each physical moment, its state updates by one step.

$$d\tau \propto 1$$

**In Laboratory Frame  $S$ :**

We see the particle moving in space ( $v_{ext} = v$ ). According to the Light Path Conservation Theorem, its internal evolution speed is forced to decrease:

$$v_{int} = \sqrt{c^2 - v^2}$$

This means that for each laboratory time step  $dt$ , the particle's internal state only updates by  $\sqrt{c^2 - v^2}/c$  steps.

**Mapping Relationship:**

Since "time" is physically defined as the cumulative number of internal state updates, the time



$dt$  recorded in frame  $S$   
and time  $dt'$  (i.e.,  $d\tau$ ) recorded  
in frame  $S'$  satisfy the  
proportional relationship:

$$dt' = \frac{v_{int}}{c} dt = \frac{\sqrt{c^2 - v^2}}{c} dt = \sqrt{1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}} dt$$

This is the time dilation  
formula:

$$dt = \gamma dt', \quad \text{where } \gamma = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}}$$

Note: No spacetime geo-  
metric assumptions are  
used here, only **conser-  
vation allocation of count-  
ing rate (Clock Rate)**.

### 3.3.3 3.3.3 Length Contraction: Count- ing Signal Round Trips

Next, we derive spatial  
transformation. We need  
to define how to mea-  
sure length in a moving  
frame. The most oper-  
ational definition is the  
**radar echo method**: send  
a light signal, reflect from  
one end to the other, mea-  
sure round trip time.

Imagine a particle carry-  
ing a rod of length  $L'$  (at  
rest in frame  $S'$ ). The  
particle moves at speed  
 $v$  along the  $x$ -axis rela-  
tive to frame  $S$ .

In frame  $S'$ , the light sig-  
nal travels from rod tail  
to head and back, taking  
time  $\Delta t' = 2L'/c$ .

In frame  $S$ , we see the  
rod length as  $L$ .

**Outbound:** Light at speed  
 $c$  chases the rod head es-  
caping at speed  $v$ . Rela-  
tive speed is  $c - v$ . Time  
taken  $\Delta t_1 = L/(c - v)$ .

**Return:** Light at speed  $c$  collides head-on with rod tail. Relative speed is  $c + v$ . Time taken  $\Delta t_2 = L/(c + v)$ . Total round trip time (frame  $S$ ):

$$\Delta t = \Delta t_1 + \Delta t_2 = \frac{L}{c - v} + \frac{L}{c + v} = \frac{2Lc}{c^2 - v^2} = \frac{2L}{c(1 - v^2/c^2)} =$$

Now, using the time dilation relationship derived earlier. The round trip time  $\Delta t$  measured in frame  $S$  should be  $\gamma$  times the round trip time  $\Delta t'$  measured in frame  $S'$  (because the clock on  $S'$  runs slow, it reads fewer numbers, corresponding to longer physical duration as seen by  $S$ ... wait, need to be careful here).

**Strict Logic:**

"Time dilation" means:  $S'$ 's clock runs slow. If  $S'$  reads  $\Delta t'$  seconds, then  $S$  will think this actually took  $\gamma \Delta t'$  seconds. That is:  $\Delta t = \gamma \Delta t'$ . Substituting into the above equation:

$$\frac{2L}{c} \gamma^2 = \gamma \left( \frac{2L'}{c} \right)$$

$$\frac{2L}{c} \gamma = \frac{2L'}{c}$$

$$L = \frac{L'}{\gamma} = L' \sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}$$

This is **Lorentz Length Contraction**. Again, we did not assume space curves; we merely derived a **pursuit problem under a limiting speed  $c$** .

### 3.3.4 Algebraic Reconstruction of Lorentz Transformation Matrix

With  $\Delta t = \gamma \Delta t'$  and  $L = L'/\gamma$ , can we write the coordinate transformation  $(t, x) \rightarrow (t', x')$ ?

Based on QCA's **translation invariance** (clause 3 of Axiom  $\Omega$ ), the transformation must be linear:

$$x' = A(x - vt)$$

$$t' = D(t - Bx)$$

(Form determined by "origin  $x = vt$  is  $x' = 0$  in  $S'$ ").

**Using Length Contraction:**

Consider moment  $t = 0$ , frame  $S$  measures a rod at rest in frame  $S'$  (endpoints  $x = 0$  and  $x = L$ ).

Corresponding  $S'$  coordinates are  $x'_1 = A(0) = 0$  and  $x'_2 = A(L)$ .

Length  $L' = x'_2 - x'_1 = AL$ .

Known  $L = L'/\gamma \implies L' = \gamma L$ .

Therefore, coefficient  $A = \gamma$ .

$$x' = \gamma(x - vt)$$

**Using Light Speed Invariance** (direct corollary of causality axiom):

If a signal satisfies  $x = ct$ , then it must satisfy  $x' = ct'$  in frame  $S'$ .

Substituting expressions for  $x'$  and  $t'$ :

$$ct' = \gamma(ct - vt) = \gamma ct(1 - v/c)$$

$$t' = \gamma t(1 - v/c)$$

On the other hand, substituting linear form for  $t'$ :

$$t' = D(t - Bct) = Dt(1 - Bc)$$

Equating the two:

$$\gamma(1 - v/c) = D(1 - Bc)$$

Since this holds for any light signal ( $x = ct$  and  $x = -ct$ ), we can solve:  
 $D = \gamma$ ,  $B = v/c^2$ .

Thus, we have completely derived the Lorentz transformation:

$$\begin{cases} x' = \gamma(x - vt) \\ t' = \gamma(t - \frac{v}{c^2}x) \end{cases}$$

### 3.3.5 Conclusion: Geometry is a Statistical Illusion

This is not just a reproduction of mathematical derivation, but an ontological declaration.

In standard textbooks, Lorentz transformations are considered spacetime geometric rotations (hyperbolic rotation):

$$\begin{pmatrix} ct' \\ x' \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \cosh \eta & -\sinh \eta \\ -\sinh \eta & \cosh \eta \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} ct \\ x \end{pmatrix}$$

where  $\tanh \eta = v/c$ .

In our QCA theory, this "hyperbolic rotation" originates from Euclidean rotation on the **information rate circle**:

$$v_{ext} = c \sin \theta, \quad v_{int} = c \cos \theta$$

Lorentz factor  $\gamma = 1/\cos \theta = \sec \theta$ .

**Profound Insight:**

The **hyperbolic angle (rapidity  $\eta$ )** in Minkowski space is mathematically equivalent to the **allocation angle  $\theta$**  in QCA Hilbert space.

We think we live in a 3+1 dimensional pseudo-Euclidean spacetime, but actually, we live in a Hilbert space projection governed by **information rate conservation ( $L_2$  norm)**. Spacetime geometry is not a stage; it is **statistical behavior collectively exhibited by vast numbers of qubits to satisfy conservation laws**. Special relativity is not wrong, but it is not ultimate truth; it is macroscopic emergence of underlying unitary computation.



## Chapter 4

# Gravity as Statis- tical Neces- sity

### 4.1 4.1 Entangle- ment and Geom- etry: Spacetime Distance as Quan- tum Mutual In- formation

In continuous spacetime, "distance"  $d(x, y)$  is a fundamental concept given by metric tensor  $g_{\mu\nu}$ . But in a discrete quantum network, what does "physical distance" between two nodes  $x$  and  $y$  mean? If two nodes are far apart on the lattice graph (large graph distance), but have extremely strong quantum entanglement (Bell states) between them, then in the sense of quantum information, they are actually "together."

#### 4.1.1 4.1.1 Microscopic Revelation of Ryu-Takayanagi Formula

One of the most profound discoveries in the holographic principle and AdS/CFT correspondence is the Ryu-Takayanagi (RT) formula:

$$S_A = \frac{\text{Area}(\gamma_A)}{4G}$$

It states that entanglement entropy  $S_A$  on the boundary is equivalent to minimal surface area  $\text{Area}(\gamma_A)$  in the bulk. This suggests: **Entanglement is the glue connecting spacetime.**

If you cut entanglement between two regions, spacetime breaks. Conversely, if you increase entanglement between two regions, they are pulled closer geometrically.

#### 4.1.2 4.1.2 Definition: Information Distance

In the QCA framework, we abandon the traditional "meter stick" definition and instead use **quantum mutual information** as a measure of distance.

Let  $\rho_x$  and  $\rho_y$  be the reduced density matrices of nodes  $x$  and  $y$  respectively, and  $\rho_{xy}$  be their joint density matrix. Mutual information is defined as:

$$I(x : y) = S(\rho_x) + S(\rho_y) - S(\rho_{xy})$$



where  $S(\rho) = -\text{Tr}(\rho \ln \rho)$  is von Neumann entropy. Mutual information measures the strength of total correlation (classical + quantum) between two systems. For QCA networks in ground state or vacuum state, mutual information decays exponentially with graph distance  $d$  (due to locality axiom):

$$I(x : y) \sim e^{-d(x,y)/\xi}$$

where  $\xi$  is the correlation length.

We now reverse this and use mutual information to define **emergent geometric distance**  $D(x, y)$ :

$$D(x, y) \equiv -\xi \ln \left( \frac{I(x : y)}{I_{max}} \right)$$

The physical meaning of this definition is extremely profound:

**Stronger Entanglement, Closer Distance:** When  $I(x : y) \rightarrow I_{max}$  (maximum entanglement),  $D \rightarrow 0$ . These two points are geometrically coincident (or connected via wormhole).

**Entanglement Vanishes, Distance Infinite:** When  $I(x : y) \rightarrow 0$ ,  $D \rightarrow \infty$ . These two points belong to disconnected universes.

### 4.1.3 4.1.3 Geometric Reconstruction: From Network to Manifold

With distance  $D(x, y)$ , we can use **multidimensional**

**scaling (MDS)** to embed the discrete QCA network into a smooth Riemannian manifold  $\mathcal{M}$ .

If QCA is in ground state (Vacuum State), entanglement distribution across the entire network is uniform. The manifold reconstructed from this is **flat Minkowski space**. This explains why we see flat spacetime when there is no matter.

However, when matter excitations exist in the network, matter carries additional information and interferes with surrounding entanglement structure.

**Matter = Local Entanglement Destruction/Reorganization.** A particle may be a highly entangled "knot" that consumes surrounding entanglement resources.

If mutual information  $I(A : B)$  between regions  $A$  and  $B$  decreases due to matter inserted in between (entanglement is "screened" or "crowded out" by matter), according to formula  $D \sim -\ln I$ , their **physical distance  $D$  increases**.

**This is the origin of gravity:**

**Matter reduces vacuum entanglement, causing space to be "stretched" or "expanded."**

This non-uniform stretching of space manifests macroscopically as **curvature**. Light rays bend when passing massive objects, not because light

is attracted, but because light must pass through a spatial region with "lower entanglement, causing longer effective path."

#### 4.1.4 4.1.4 Summary

This section establishes a revolutionary concept:

**Geometry is Entanglement.**

Spacetime is no longer a stage, but a holographic projection of qubit correlations.

Gravitational potential  $\Phi$  is essentially a logarithmic function of mutual information  $I$ .

In the next section, we will quantify this qualitative picture by introducing "local information volume conservation" to derive that mysterious metric deformation formula.

## 4.2 4.2 Local Information Volume Conservation: Why Must Space Expand When Information Compresses Time?

In Section 4.1, we qualitatively established the concept that "geometry is entanglement." Spacetime curvature is no longer matter distorting a background stage, but matter interfering with entanglement network connectivity.

However, to move from qualitative picture to quantitative Einstein field equations, we need a stronger mathematical constraint. If it were merely "entanglement reduction causes distance increase," we would only get some scalar gravity theory (similar to relativistic generalization of Newtonian potential). Early attempts (such as Einstein's variable speed of light theory in 1911) predicted light deflection angles only half of general relativity's prediction. This section will solve the "half-angle problem" and derive the correct optical metric form by introducing the key principle of **"local information volume conservation."** This principle is not just a mathematical patch, but an inevitable corollary of QCA unitarity at the statistical mechanics level.

#### 4.2.1 4.2.1 Discrete Correspondence of Liouville Theorem

In classical statistical mechanics, Liouville's theorem states: Phase space volume of Hamiltonian systems is conserved during evolution (incompressible flow). This means if we compress momentum space, we must stretch coordinate space to keep  $dp \cdot dq$  constant.

In QCA, the counterpart is **unitary evolution preserves Hilbert space**

**dimension.**

Let a local volume element  $V$  contain  $N$  qubits.

Its Hilbert space dimension is  $D = 2^N$ .

Unitary evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  is full rank, mapping  $D$ -dimensional space to  $D$ -dimensional space.

This means information is neither compressed (lost) nor diluted (created from nothing).

When we define continuous "physical coordinates"  $(t, x)$  at macroscopic scales, we are coarse-graining underlying discrete nodes.

Let physical metric be  $g_{\mu\nu}$ . Local physical volume element (including time) is:

$$dV_{phys} = \sqrt{-g} d^4x$$

This physical volume element directly corresponds to "number of operations" or "degrees of freedom" of the underlying QCA.

**Axiom (Local Information Volume Conservation):**

In any coordinate transformation or geometric deformation, the effective quantum degree of freedom density per unit coordinate volume must remain constant.

#### 4.2.2 4.2.2 Antagonism Between Time Dilation and Space Expansion

Consider a region with high local information processing density  $\rho_{\text{info}}$  (e.g.,

containing massive objects).

According to Light Path Conservation, accelerated internal computation means external clock slows. We describe this time dilation using **refractive index**  $n(x) > 1$ :

$$d\tau = \frac{1}{n(x)} dt$$

This means physical time interval  $d\tau$  is compressed (relative to coordinate time  $dt$ ). Or, the number of physical "ticks" contained per unit coordinate time  $dt$  decreases.

If only time dilation occurred, total degrees of freedom in this spacetime region would decrease (because time dimension capacity shrinks). To satisfy volume conservation (Liouville constraint), spatial dimensions must undergo compensatory **expansion**.

Let spatial scaling factor be  $a(x)$ , i.e.,  $dl = a(x)dx$ .

Four-dimensional volume element change factor is:

$$\sqrt{-g} \propto \frac{1}{n} \cdot a^3$$

(for  $3 + 1$  dimensional spacetime).

To maintain phase space volume (or total information capacity) constant, do we need  $\sqrt{-g} = 1$ ?

More precisely, we need to examine phase space  $(x, k)$  volume. Wave vector  $k$  is inversely proportional to wavelength  $\lambda$ .

If physical length is stretched by  $a$ , physical momentum cutoff (Brillouin zone boundary) shrinks by  $1/a$ . For photons (or massless fields), density of states  $\rho(\omega) \sim \omega^2$ . Frequency redshifts  $\omega \rightarrow \omega/n$ . To maintain photon number conservation (or information channel number conservation), spatial volume expansion must precisely compensate frequency cutoff contraction. After rigorous statistical counting (see appendix for details), in isotropic media, conservation condition yields the following constraint:

$$\eta_t \cdot \eta_x = 1$$

where  $\eta_t = 1/n$  is time flow rate factor,  $\eta_x = a$  is spatial expansion factor.

Therefore, necessarily:

$$\eta_x = \frac{1}{\eta_t} = n$$

**Conclusion:** If gravity causes time to slow by factor  $n$ , it must simultaneously cause space to expand by factor  $n$ .

$$d\tau = \frac{1}{n}dt, \quad dl = n dx$$

### 4.2.3 4.2.3 Derivation of Optical Metric

Based on the above dual scaling, we can write the macroscopic effective metric.

On flat background  $ds^2 = -c^2 dt^2 + dx^2$ , introducing scaling:

$$ds^2 = -c^2 d\tau^2 + dl^2 = -c^2 \left(\frac{1}{n} dt\right)^2 + (ndx)^2$$

Rearranging:

$$ds^2 = -\frac{1}{n^2} c^2 dt^2 + n^2 (dx^2 + dy^2 + dz^2)$$

This is the famous **Optical Metric**, also called Gordon metric.

In weak field approximation, refractive index relates to Newtonian gravitational potential  $\Phi$  ( $n \approx 1 - 2\Phi/c^2$ , note  $\Phi < 0$ ):

$$g_{00} \approx -(1+2\Phi), \quad g_{ij} \approx (1-2\Phi)\delta_{ij}$$

This **completely matches** the weak field expansion of Schwarzschild metric in isotropic coordinates in general relativity.

#### 4.2.4 Solving the Half-Angle Problem

Why is this correction so important?

If we only consider time dilation (scalar gravity), metric is  $ds^2 = -(1 + 2\Phi)dt^2 + dx^2$ .

When calculating light deflection, light travels straight in space, only affected by time potential. Deflection angle  $\theta = \frac{2GM}{rc^2}$ .

But in our optical metric, space is also "expanded" ( $n^2 dx^2$ ). Light rays not only curve due to slow time, but also because



space itself deforms like a lens.

According to Fermat's principle  $\delta \int n dl = 0$ , spatial refractive index contribution equals temporal contribution.

Total deflection angle  $\theta = \theta_{time} + \theta_{space} = \frac{4GM}{rc^2}$ .

This is exactly Einstein's final corrected result in 1915, also verified by Eddington's observation in 1919.

#### 4.2.5 4.2.5 Summary

This section proves: **Spatial curvature of space-time is the inevitable companion of time dilation.**

As long as we acknowledge:

Gravity originates from local differences in information processing rates (Light Path Conservation);

Underlying evolution follows unitarity (Information Volume Conservation);

Then, the metric structure of general relativity is the unique mathematical solution. Space must curve because if it doesn't, information squeezed by time would have nowhere to go, violating information conservation law.

**Gravity is the geometric projection of information conservation.**

### 4.3 4.3 Entropic Derivation of Einstein Field Equations: Proof of IGVP Principle

In the previous two sections, we established the concept that "geometry is entanglement" and derived the specific form of optical metric through "local information volume conservation." This solves the **kinematics** problem: if gravity exists, what should it look like (how does metric deform)?

Now, we must solve the **dynamics** problem: **Why** does matter distribution determine spacetime curvature? Or, why must the equation of state be Einstein's field equations  $G_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi GT_{\mu\nu}$ ?

In standard general relativity, this equation is introduced as an axiomatic assumption (Einstein-Hilbert action). But in our discrete ontology, gravity is not a fundamental force, but an **entropic force**. It is similar to gas pressure or rubber elasticity—a macroscopic statistical tendency of systems to maximize microscopic state numbers.

This section will propose and prove the **Information-Gravity Variational Principle (IGVP)**, thereby deriving Einstein's field equations from first principles.

#### 4.3.1 Microscopic Mechanism of Entropic Force

In thermodynamics, if a system's entropy  $S$  depends on some macroscopic parameter  $x$ , the system experiences a statistical force  $F = T \frac{\partial S}{\partial x}$ , driving it toward entropy increase.

In QCA universe, the macroscopic parameter is **space-time geometry (metric  $g_{\mu\nu}$ )**.

We need to consider two parts of entropy:

##### **Geometric Entropy $S_{geom}$ :**

This is the entropy of the holographic entanglement network itself, corresponding to complexity of spacetime connections. According to Ryu-Takayanagi formula and black hole entropy formula, it is proportional to area.

##### **Matter Entropy $S_{matter}$ :**

This is entanglement entropy or information content carried by matter excitations (Qubit states) distributed on the network.

**Core Assumption:** The universe is always in **maximum entanglement equilibrium state** within local causal diamonds. That is, for any given matter distribution, spacetime geometry automatically adjusts to maximize total entropy.

$$S_{tot} = S_{geom} + S_{matter} \rightarrow \text{Max}$$

### 4.3.2 Construction of IGVP Action

To formalize this idea, we construct total entropy functional (equivalent to action  $I$ ).

#### 1. Geometric Entropy Term

In continuous limit, area is proportional to integral of curvature scalar  $R$  (this is generalization of Wald entropy to Einstein gravity, or derived from deficit angles in Regge calculus).

$$S_{geom} \propto \frac{1}{l_P^2} \int d^4x \sqrt{-g} R$$

Coefficient  $1/l_P^2$  originates from Planck scale discreteness: curvature is actually macroscopic average of lattice defect density.

#### 2. Matter Entropy Term

Matter's load on the network manifests as information processing density. Macroscopically, this is Lagrangian density  $\mathcal{L}_m$  (or more accurately, it derives stress-energy tensor).

$$S_{matter} \propto \int d^4x \sqrt{-g} \mathcal{L}_m$$

#### 3. Variational Principle

We define total action (as negative of entropy or its Legendre transform):

$$I_{IGVP}[g] = \frac{1}{16\pi G} \int d^4x \sqrt{-g} R + \int d^4x \sqrt{-g} \mathcal{L}_m$$

This looks like standard Einstein-Hilbert action.

But in our theory, each term has clear information-theoretic origin:

$\frac{1}{16\pi G}$  is not an arbitrary coupling constant; it directly relates to QCA's maximum information density (bits/Planck area).

$R$  is a measure of network connection complexity.

$\mathcal{L}_m$  is matter entanglement's occupation of network resources.

### 4.3.3 Derivation of Field Equations

To find equilibrium geometry, we vary metric  $g^{\mu\nu}$ , seeking stationary points  $\delta I_{IGVP} = 0$ .

#### Geometric Term Variation:

Using Palatini identity:

$$\delta(\sqrt{-g}R) = \sqrt{-g}(R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2}Rg_{\mu\nu})\delta g^{\mu\nu} + \sqrt{-g}\nabla_\sigma(\dots)$$

(Boundary terms handled at holographic screen, ignored here).

Result:  $\frac{1}{16\pi G}(G_{\mu\nu})$ .

#### Matter Term Variation:

By definition, stress-energy tensor  $T_{\mu\nu}$  is matter action's response to metric:

$$T_{\mu\nu} \equiv -\frac{2}{\sqrt{-g}} \frac{\delta(\sqrt{-g}\mathcal{L}_m)}{\delta g^{\mu\nu}}$$

Or more intuitively, in information theory,  $T_{\mu\nu}$  represents **information cost required to change**

**geometry (stretch space-time).**

Result:  $-\frac{1}{2}T_{\mu\nu}$ .

**Equilibrium Equation:**

Setting total variation to zero:

$$\frac{1}{16\pi G}(R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2}Rg_{\mu\nu}) - \frac{1}{2}T_{\mu\nu} = 0$$

Rearranging:

$$R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2}Rg_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi GT_{\mu\nu}$$

**Q.E.D.**

#### 4.3.4 4.3.4 Reconstruction of Physical Meaning: Equation of State of Space-time

Through IGVP, we not only derived Einstein's field equations, but more importantly changed our understanding of them.

**Traditional View:** Mass tells spacetime how to curve. This is a dynamical causal relationship.

**IGVP View:** Field equations are **equations of state**, like  $PV = nRT$ .

$G_{\mu\nu}$  (geometric tensor) corresponds to system's "elastic modulus" or "restoring force" for geometric deformation.

$T_{\mu\nu}$  (energy-momentum) corresponds to system's internal "thermal pressure" or "information flow."

$8\pi G$  corresponds to "Boltzmann constant," connecting microscopic bit numbers with macroscopic geometric quantities.

**Gravity exists because spacetime network tries to maintain maximum entropy distribution.**

When matter aggregates, it reduces local entanglement degrees of freedom (occupies channels). To compensate this entropy decrease, spacetime geometry must curve (increase surface area/connection number), thus restoring thermodynamic equilibrium.

This is why gravity is always attractive (at least under positive energy conditions): because matter always tends to aggregate to minimize occupation of total network information capacity, or, the network tends to contract to maximize connection density, until pushed apart by matter's "exclusion principle."

At this point, we have completed the complete logical closed loop from microscopic QCA to macroscopic general relativity. Gravity is no longer mysterious; it is an inevitable product of quantum information statistical mechanics.

#### **4.4 4.4 Black Holes: Entanglement Knots in QCA Networks and Holographic Screens**

If Einstein's equations are the "equation of state" of spacetime, then black

holes are "singular points" of this equation of state. In classical general relativity, black hole centers have density-infinite singularities, where physical laws break down. However, in QCA's discrete ontology, true "infinity" does not exist.

What exactly are black holes?

This section will provide a completely different microscopic picture of black holes from traditional geometric perspective, based on Axiom  $\Omega$  and Light Path Conservation Theorem: **Black holes are not spacetime holes, but "congestion knots" in information processing networks.** Their horizons are holographic screens storing maximally densely packed entangled information.

#### 4.4.1 4.4.1 Limit of Information Congestion: Horizon Formation

Recall the optical metric refractive index we derived in Section 4.2:

$$n(x) \approx 1 + \frac{G}{c^4} \rho_{\text{info}}(x)$$

And time flow rate caused by Light Path Conservation:

$$v_{\text{int}} = c/n(x)$$

As matter continuously aggregates, local information processing density  $\rho_{\text{info}}$  keeps rising. Ac-



cording to holographic principle (Bekenstein Bound), any region has an information density upper limit  $\rho_{max} \sim 1/l_P^2$  (Planck density).

When  $\rho_{info} \rightarrow \rho_{max}$ , refractive index  $n \rightarrow \infty$ .

What happens then?

**Time Freeze:** Internal evolution speed  $v_{int} \rightarrow 0$  (relative to external observers). Qubits inside black holes are frantically computing (proper time extremely fast), but appear "frozen" to the outside.

**Space Stretch:** Spatial scaling factor  $a = n \rightarrow \infty$ . Physical distance to black hole center becomes infinite. This corresponds to "deep well" in classical geometry.

**Light Speed Zero:** External signal propagation speed  $v_{ext} = c/n^2 \rightarrow 0$ . Information cannot escape this region.

We define **horizon** as the critical surface satisfying

$$\rho_{info} = \rho_{max}.$$

This explains why horizon is a one-way membrane: it is a **saturation layer** of information processing capacity. Any additional information trying to cross it gets "stuck" on the surface due to lack of extra bandwidth.

#### 4.4.2 Microscopic Statistics of Entropy: Why Area?

Why is black hole entropy proportional to area  $A$ , not volume  $V$ ? This is incomprehensible in continuous space, but obvious in QCA networks.

Consider horizon as a closed surface  $\Sigma$ . On QCA graph  $\Lambda$ , horizon cuts connection edges (links) between internal nodes  $V_{in}$  and external nodes  $V_{out}$ .

Each cut connection edge represents a pair of entangled qubits (Bell pair). For external observers, internal states are unknowable (shielded by horizon). Therefore, we perform partial trace over these unknowable degrees of freedom.

According to von Neumann entropy definition, entanglement entropy  $S$  equals number of cut connections  $N_{links}$  times entanglement per edge (maximum 1 bit).

$$S_{BH} \propto N_{links}$$

On regular lattices, number of connections crossing a surface is obviously proportional to discrete area (number of lattice points) of that surface:

$$N_{links} \sim \frac{\text{Area}}{a^2}$$

where  $a$  is lattice spacing (Planck length  $l_P$ ). Therefore, we directly derive the form of Bekenstein-Hawking formula:

$$S_{BH} \propto \frac{\text{Area}}{l_P^2}$$

**Physical Interpretation:**

**Black hole surface is the densest hard drive in the universe.** Every Planck area unit  $l_P^2$  is a bit storage location. Black hole entropy is enormous because it "flattens" (projects) all information in three-dimensional volume onto two-dimensional surface. This is the microscopic mechanism of **holographic principle**.

#### 4.4.3 Resolution of Singularities and Internal Structure

Classical theory predicts a volume-zero, density-infinite singularity inside horizon. But in QCA, this cannot happen.

Because  $\Lambda$  is discrete, number of nodes is finite. When matter collapses, it cannot collapse into a point (due to Pauli exclusion principle and minimum lattice spacing constraints). Instead, black hole interior forms a **high-density entanglement core**.

**Spatial Topology:** Interior is not a point, but a highly interconnected complex network, possibly similar to **small-world network** or **fast scrambler**.

**Information State:** Information falling into black holes does not disappear, but is rapidly scrambled,

uniformly distributed throughout horizon/internal network. This is like dropping ink into the sea—ink molecules remain, but information is completely delocalized.

Therefore, **singularities are only breakdown points of continuum mathematical models, not termination of physical reality.** In QCA, singularities are replaced by Planck-scale "fuzzballs" or high-entanglement states.

#### 4.4.4 4.4.4 Hawking Radiation and Unitarity Restoration

Finally, how to resolve information paradox?

According to unitarity of Axiom  $\Omega$ , black hole evolution operator  $\hat{U}_{BH}$  must be unitary. This means information never disappears.

Hawking radiation is not random product of vacuum fluctuations, but **stimulated radiation of highly entangled states** on horizon surface.

**Horizon is Not Vacuum:** It is an active qubit layer.

**Information Leakage:** Due to QCA's local interactions, qubits on horizon exchange information with external vacuum qubits (through tiny non-zero  $v_{ext}$ , i.e., quantum tunneling).

**Encrypted Transmission:** Radiated photons carry horizon interior in-

formation, but this information is highly encrypted (scrambled). This is like burning an encyclopedia—smoke and ash contain all atomic information of the book, but appear as thermal radiation (random).

If we could collect all Hawking radiation and have a super quantum computer, we could in principle reconstruct the initial matter state that fell into the black hole. This completely resolves black hole information paradox—**black holes not only don't swallow information, they are actually the most perfect information mixers and emitters.**

#### 4.4.5 4.4.5 Summary

Black holes are ultimate entities in QCA universe. They are limits of spacetime, warehouses of information, and magnifying glasses of quantum gravitational effects. Through black holes, we glimpse the deepest secrets of Axiom  $\Omega$ : **Matter, gravity, and information are trinity on the horizon.**

At this point, we have completed Part II "The Emergence of Spacetime." Starting from a simple lattice axiom, we reconstructed light speed, relativity, curved spacetime, and even black holes. In the next Part III, we turn our gaze to actors on the

stage, exploring that more colorful world—**The Emergence of Matter.**

## Part III

# The Emer- gence of Matter





## Chapter 5

# The Topologi- cal Origin of Mass

### 5.1 5.1 Why Do Photons Have No Mass? — Pure Translation Modes

In the Light Path Conservation Axiom  $v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2 = c^2$ , we have already seen the shadow of mass. Rest mass  $m_0$  corresponds to the maximum internal oscillation frequency when  $v_{ext} = 0$ .

For photons, experiments tell us their rest mass is zero ( $m_\gamma < 10^{-18}$  eV). This means in our theory, photons must satisfy:

$$v_{int} \equiv 0$$

which leads to:

$$v_{ext} \equiv c$$

Why must photons be

this way? This stems from their evolution mode in QCA networks.

### 5.1.1 5.1.1 Definition 5.1 (Translation-Invariant Mode)

Consider a one-dimensional simplified model of QCA. Let quantum state be  $|\psi(x, t)\rangle$ . If evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  merely maps state from  $x$  to  $x+a$  (or  $x-a$ ) without changing its internal phase or spin structure, then this excitation is called a **Pure Translation Mode**.

$$\hat{U}|\psi(x)\rangle = |\psi(x \pm a)\rangle$$

### 5.1.2 5.1.2 Theorem 5.1 (Massless Theorem)

If an excitation's evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  can be globally diagonalized as pure translation generator  $e^{i\hat{P}a}$  without any local mixing terms, then this excitation's internal evolution speed  $v_{int} = 0$ , i.e., this particle is massless.

**Proof:**

Pure translation means Hamiltonian  $\hat{H} \sim \hat{P}$ .

In Hilbert space, state vector  $|\psi(t)\rangle$  merely moves between position bases  $|x\rangle$  without evolving on internal degrees of freedom (such as spin flips). According to microscopic derivation of Light Path Conservation (see Chapter 3, Section 3.2),  $v_{int}$

corresponds to parts of Hamiltonian that **anti-commute** with momentum  $\hat{P}$  (i.e., mass term  $\hat{M}$ ).

If  $\hat{H}$  only has  $\hat{P}$  term, then  $\hat{M} \equiv 0 \implies v_{int} \equiv 0$ .

Q.E.D.

### 5.1.3 5.1.3 Physical Picture

Photons are "heartless" information packets. When transmitting on lattices, they need no internal computation. They simply transport bits from A to B.

Because they have no "internal life," they have no proper time ( $\tau = 0$ ) and no rest mass. They are destined to eternally wander at the universe's maximum allowed speed.

This also explains why gauge bosons (under unbroken symmetry) are usually massless: they are **messengers** for transmitting information in networks, not **nodes** for processing information. So, what has mass? It must be things that **"stop to think."** In the next section, we will see that matter particles are precisely products of this "thinking."

## 5.2 5.2 Matter as Topological Knots: Self-Referential Loops and Winding Num- bers

In the previous section, we established that photons are pure **translation modes** in QCA networks—they are unidirectional information flows with no internal echo, hence no mass. Now, we face a more challenging question: **How to construct a particle that can "stop"?**

In a medium with constant fundamental propagation speed  $c$ , rest seems impossible. The only solution is **looping**. If a wave packet no longer propagates in a straight line but is trapped by some mechanism rotating in a closed path, then its **average position** can remain stationary or move at speeds below  $c$ .

This section will prove: **Matter particles are essentially topological knots in spacetime networks.** This "knot" is not a physical rope knot, but **phase winding** of quantum states in parameter space (momentum space). It is precisely this topological non-triviality that prevents wave packet dispersion and endows particles with "solid" identity—namely **rest mass**.

### 5.2.1 5.2.1 Schrödinger's Trembling and "Photon in a Box" Model

To intuitively understand the origin of mass, let's revisit a classic physical picture: **photon in a box**.

Imagine a box made of perfect mirrors containing a photon. The photon bounces back and forth at speed  $c$ .

For observers outside the box, the photon as a whole has average velocity 0.

The photon's energy  $E = h\nu$  is confined in the box. According to mass-energy equation, the box exhibits increased inertial mass  $m = E/c^2$ .

In the microscopic world of QCA, there are no "mirrors" as macroscopic objects. So what acts as mirrors, bouncing information flow back?

The answer is **spatial topological structure** or **chirality coupling**.

In a one-dimensional Dirac-QCA model (see Chapter 3, Section 3.2), evolution operator contains a mixing term  $mc^2\sigma_x$ . This term flips particle chirality: turning "left-moving wave" into "right-moving wave" and vice versa.

$$L \xrightarrow{\text{mass term}} R \xrightarrow{\text{mass term}} L$$

This constant flipping causes particles to perform **Zitterbewegung (trembling)** at microscopic scales. Like a drunkard, though each

step is taken at light speed, macroscopic displacement is very slow due to constant direction changes.

**Physical Picture 5.2:**

**Mass is not the quantity of some "matter"; it is the frequency at which information flow undergoes "self-referential scattering."** A particle is a photon that traps itself.

### 5.2.2 Topology of Momentum Space: Winding Number

Why is this "trapped" state stable? Why don't particles suddenly disintegrate into photons flying away? This requires introducing the concept of **topological protection**.

In QCA, due to translation invariance, we can diagonalize evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  in momentum space (Brillouin zone, topologically homeomorphic to circle  $S^1$ ).

For a two-component system (such as fermions), effective Hamiltonian  $\hat{H}(k)$  can be written as linear combination of Pauli matrices:

$$\hat{H}(k) = \mathbf{d}(k) \cdot \boldsymbol{\sigma} = d_x(k)\sigma_x + d_y(k)\sigma_y + d_z(k)\sigma_z$$

where vector  $\mathbf{d}(k)$  is a periodic function of momentum  $k$ .

As  $k$  traverses the entire Brillouin zone (from  $-\pi/a$  to  $\pi/a$ ), vector  $\mathbf{d}(k)$

traces a closed curve in three-dimensional space. More importantly, if we focus on normalized vector  $\hat{\mathbf{n}}(k) = \mathbf{d}(k)/|\mathbf{d}(k)|$ , it defines a mapping from circle  $S^1$  to unit sphere  $S^2$  (or its equator circle  $S^1$ ).

**Definition 5.2 (Winding Number):**

For one-dimensional systems, if Hamiltonian is constrained by chiral symmetry (i.e.,  $\mathbf{d}$  restricted to  $xz$  plane), mapping degenerates to  $S^1 \rightarrow S^1$ .

We can define integer topological invariant  $\mathcal{W}$ :

$$\mathcal{W} = \frac{1}{2\pi} \oint_{BZ} \left( \hat{n}_z \frac{d\hat{n}_x}{dk} - \hat{n}_x \frac{d\hat{n}_z}{dk} \right) dk$$

Intuitively, this is the number of times vector  $\mathbf{d}(k)$  rotates around the origin.

### 5.2.3 5.2.3 Mass Generation Theorem

Now we state the core theorem of this chapter, establishing the necessary connection between topology and mass.

**Theorem 5.2 (Topological Mass Generation Theorem):**

In a local unitary QCA system, if an excited state has winding number  $\mathcal{W} \neq 0$ , then this excited state

necessar-  
ily has non-  
zero rest  
mass (en-  
ergy gap).  
That is:  
**Non-trivial  
topology  
 $\Rightarrow$  mas-  
sive par-  
ticle.**

**Proof:**

**Proof by Con-  
tradiction:** As-  
sume particle is  
massless.

According to Def-  
inition 5.1, mass-  
less means evo-  
lution is pure trans-  
lation, or can be  
continuously de-  
formed to pure  
translation.

For pure transla-  
tion operator  $\hat{U}_{trans} =$   
 $e^{ik\hat{\sigma}_z}$ , correspond-  
ing  $\mathbf{d}(k)$  vector  
always points in  
 $z$ -axis direction  
(north pole), or  
monotonically changes  
along  $z$ -axis with  
 $k$  without rotat-  
ing around origin.

In this case, wind-  
ing number  $\mathcal{W} =$   
0.

Since winding num-  
ber is a discrete  
integer, it cannot  
change continu-  
ously with param-  
eters. As long  
as Hamiltonian's  
energy gap doesn't  
close (i.e.,  $|\mathbf{d}(k)| \neq$   
0),  $\mathcal{W}$  is a **topo-  
logical invari-**



**ant.**

Therefore, if we want to construct a system with  $\mathcal{W} \neq 0$  (e.g.,  $\mathbf{d}(k)$  winds once in  $xz$  plane), it's impossible to deform it into massless photons without going through phase transition (gap closing).

Non-zero energy gap  $\min |\mathbf{d}(k)| > 0$  is precisely rest mass  $m_0$ .

**Physical Interpretation:**

Winding number  $\mathcal{W}$  is like a "dead knot" tied on the wave function.

**Photon** ( $\mathcal{W} = 0$ ): A straight rope. It can smoothly flow through space.

**Electron** ( $\mathcal{W} = 1$ ): A knotted rope. When you try to pull it, the knot must move as a whole. To untie this knot microscopically, you need extremely high energy (reaching Planck energy scale, collapsing lattice structure). Therefore, electrons are stable.

#### 5.2.4 5.2.4 Geometric Meaning of Self-Reference

We call this structure "self-referential loop" because math-

ematically, it requires different components of wave function to mutually "see" each other.

In feedback loops described by Riccati equations (see Section 5.4), system output is fed back to input.

$$x_{next} = f(x_{now}, x_{neighbor})$$

For massless particles,  $x_{next}$  only depends on  $x_{neighbor}$  (only neighbors tell me what happened).

For massive particles,  $x_{next}$  strongly depends on  $x_{now}$  (I must remember my state from previous moment).

This **memory** or **consistency** geometrically manifests as non-trivial covering of Brillouin zone. Particle "knows" it's a whole because it "touches" its boundary in momentum space and finds it has wound around once.

### 5.2.5 5.2.5 Summary

We arrive at a startling conclusion: **Matter is dead loops of information.**

The universe's background is massless information flow (light-speed propagation).

When local information flow undergoes topological entanglement, forming non-trivial winding numbers, information is forced to rotate in place.

The frequency of this in-place rotation macroscopically manifests as **mass**.

The topological robustness of this rotation macroscopically manifests as **particle stability** (charge conservation, baryon number conservation are essentially topological charge conservation).

We are not made of "atoms"; we are made of "knots tied by light rays."

In the next section, we will further explore how this "knot" responds to external forces, thereby explaining the essence of **inertia**.

### 5.3 5.3 Mass as Impedance: Information Refresh Rate Required to Maintain In- ternal Oscil- lation ( $v_{int}$ )

After establishing the topological picture that "matter is self-referential loops of information," we must answer a quantitative dynamics question: **How does this loop resist external forces, manifesting as macroscopic inertia?** This section will derive Newton's second law  $F = ma$  in relativistic form from first principles by introducing the concept of **"Topological Impedance"**, revealing the microscopic mechanism of inertial mass: mass is not the "weight" of matter, but **response latency** of information flow to external perturbations when maintaining its internal topological structure.

### 5.3.1 Internal Refresh Rate and Cost of Existence

According to Light Path Conservation Theorem (Section 3.2), any particle's total information update amount (light path) within Planck time  $t_P$  is constant  $ct_P$ . For massive particles, this resource is allocated as:

**Displacement Update:** Changing lattice position  $|x\rangle \rightarrow |x + \Delta x\rangle$ .

**State Update:** Changing internal phase  $|\psi_{int}\rangle \rightarrow e^{-i\omega_{int}t}|\psi_{int}\rangle$ .

Rest mass  $m_0$  is defined as maximum internal frequency at rest  $\omega_0 = m_0c^2/\hbar$ . This means, to maintain particle's "existence" (i.e., keep its topological knot from disintegrating), QCA network must provide  $\omega_0$  internal refresh operations per second for this particle.

**Definition 5.3 (Cost of Existence):**

A particle's **Cost of Existence**  $C_{exist}$  equals the logic gate operation rate required for its internal state updates.

$$C_{exist} \equiv \omega_{int} = \frac{m_0 c^2}{\hbar} \sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}$$

Note that as particle speed  $v$  increases, due to time dilation, its **observed** internal refresh rate  $\omega_{int}$  actually decreases. This seems to suggest high-speed particles are "cheaper"?

Quite the opposite. Precisely because internal refresh rate decreases, system's **response capability** worsens.

### 5.3.2 5.3.2 Impedance Model: Microscopic Derivation of Inertia

Imagine a running computer program (particle).

**At Rest:** CPU resources are abundant, program refreshes 100 times per second. If you input an instruction (force  $F$ ), program can quickly respond and change state (acceleration  $a$ ).

**At High Speed:** CPU resources are 99

**Consequence:** If you input the same instruction now,

program needs extremely long time to process and respond. To outsiders, this manifests as "program becomes extremely sluggish" or "enormous inertia."

We define this sluggishness as **topological impedance**.

**Theorem 5.3 (Inertial Divergence Theorem):**

Let particle's momentum  $p$  change rate over time (force  $F$ ) be inversely proportional to internal update rate  $\omega_{int}$ .

That is: System's response sensitivity (Susceptibility) to external stimuli  $\chi \propto \omega_{int}$ .

Then inertial mass  $m_{inert} \equiv F/a$  diverges as speed  $v$  increases.

**Proof:**

According to energy-frequency relationship derived from Light Path Conservation (Chapter 3.3 appendix), relationship between total energy  $E$  and internal frequency  $\omega_{int}$  is:

$$E = \frac{m_0 c^2}{\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}} = m_0 c^2 \cdot \frac{\omega_0}{\omega_{int}}$$

(Note:  $\omega_{int} = \omega_0/\gamma$ ).

Force  $F$  is defined as energy gradient with distance,

or momentum derivative with time:

$$F = \frac{dp}{dt} = \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma m_0 v)$$

Expanding derivative:

$$F = m_0 \gamma^3 a$$

(Here considering longitudinal acceleration).

Substituting  $\gamma$  using  $\gamma = \omega_0/\omega_{int}$ :

$$F = m_0 \left( \frac{\omega_0}{\omega_{int}} \right)^3 a$$

Defining effective inertial mass  $m_{eff} = F/a$ :

$$m_{eff} = m_0 \left( \frac{\omega_0}{\omega_{int}} \right)^3$$

#### Conclusion:

When  $v \rightarrow c$ , internal refresh rate  $\omega_{int} \rightarrow 0$ .

At this point,  $m_{eff} \rightarrow \infty$ .

#### Physical Picture

##### 5.3:

Inertia is not an inherent property of matter, but a measure of **system's "crash degree."**

When a particle runs too fast, its internal clock almost stops. To change its motion state in the time it "blinks" (completes one internal update), the



external world needs  
to apply infinite  
force integral.  
This is why light  
speed cannot be  
exceeded—not be-  
cause there’s a  
wall ahead, but  
because **the faster**  
**your legs (dis-**  
**placement) run,**  
**the slower your**  
**brain (inertial**  
**processing) turns,**  
until you completely  
lose ability to change  
the status quo.

### 5.3.3 5.3.3 Mass as "Vorticity" of Information Flow

At this point, we  
have completely  
demystified mass:

**Rest Mass  $m_0$ :**  
Is **vorticity** of  
information flow  
in QCA networks.  
It is the frequency  
at which topolog-  
ical knot struc-  
ture forces infor-  
mation to rotate  
in place.

**Inertial Mass**  
 $m_{inert}$ : Is **stiff-**  
**ness of vortex**  
**resisting defor-**  
**mation.** When  
vortex is stretched  
into a helix (high-  
speed motion), its  
pitch is elongated  
(frequency decreases),  
causing stiffness  
to rise sharply.  
In this picture,

the famous Higgs mechanism is merely **effective field theory description** of this topological process.

Higgs field  $\phi$  corresponds to QCA's vacuum entanglement background.

Yukawa coupling  $y_f$  corresponds to winding strength of topological knots.

So-called "particles acquiring mass" is originally straight-propagating information flow being tripped by background entanglement, forming knots.

#### 5.3.4 5.3.4 Summary

We no longer need to assume "matter" exists. We only need to assume "obstructed information flow."

**Photons** are laminar flow.

**Electrons** are vortices in turbulence.

**Black holes** are blocked singularities.

In the next section, we will delve into the fine structure of this "vortex"—why does it not only have mass, but must also have spin? Why is it a fermion? This will lead to

the most profound mathematical chapter of this book.

## 5.4 5.4 Origin of Fermion Statistics: Riccati Square Root and $\mathbb{Z}_2$ Phase

After establishing the picture that "mass is topological knots," we face the most profound question of this chapter: **Why must these massive "knots" be fermions?**

In standard physics, the connection between spin and statistics (spin-statistics theorem) is derived through axioms in relativistic quantum field theory. It shows that particles with half-integer spin must follow Fermi-Dirac statistics (wave function changes sign upon exchange), while integer spin particles follow Bose-Einstein statistics (unchanged upon exchange). But in our discrete ontology, we do not presuppose continuous spacetime symmetry groups, nor spinor fields.

This section will prove a startling conclusion: **Fermion statistics is not an arbitrary rule, but a topological fingerprint that any self-referential structure (massive particle) capable of maintaining its existence in discrete networks necessarily carries.** This fingerprint originates from the inherent **square root structure** of Riccati equations describing feedback loops.

#### 5.4.1 5.4.1 Input-Output Relations of Self-Referential Systems

A massive particle is essentially a "self-maintaining" information loop. We can abstract it as a black box that receives input information  $\psi_{in}$  and produces output information  $\psi_{out}$ , while part of the output is fed back to the input to maintain its own state.

In QCA's transmission line model, the physical quantity describing this

input-output relationship is **impedance**  $Z$  (or reflection coefficient  $r$ ).

$$Z = \frac{V}{I} \quad (\text{voltage/current})$$

In quantum mechanical correspondence,  $Z$  corresponds to logarithmic derivative of wave function at boundary  $Z \sim \psi'/\psi$ .

A stable particle means its internal impedance structure  $Z(x)$  must satisfy some self-consistent equation. For discrete iterative systems, impedance evolution follows **Riccati equation** (discrete form is Möbius transformation):

$$Z_{n+1} = \frac{AZ_n + B}{CZ_n + D}$$

where  $A, B, C, D$  are determined by QCA's local evolution operator  $\hat{U}$ .

#### 5.4.2 5.4.2 Fixed Points and Square Root Branches

A particle as a stable topological soliton means it is not only localized in space, but also a **fixed point** in time evolution. That is, after one

period of internal evolution, its impedance structure should restore:

$$Z$$

Solving this equation, we get a quadratic equation:

$$C(Z$$

Its solution is:

$$Z^* = \frac{(A - D) \pm \sqrt{(A - D)^2 + 4BC}}{2C}$$

Here appears a decisive mathematical feature: **Square Root.**

This means, **any self-consistent, non-trivial stable particle state has its physical parameters (impedance  $Z$ ) defined on a double-sheeted Riemann surface.**

### 5.4.3 5.4.3 Rotation, Exchange, and $\mathbb{Z}_2$ Phase

Now, we consider particle's **exchange statistics.**

In  $3 + 1$  dimensional spacetime, exchanging two identical particles 1 and 2 is topologically equivalent to rotating one particle around the other by  $360^\circ$  (or rotating the particle itself by

360° in center-of-mass frame).

In parameter space, this rotation operation corresponds to evolving along a closed path on the Riemann surface for one cycle.

Since  $Z^*$  contains square root  $\sqrt{\Delta}$  (where  $\Delta$  is a complex function of evolution parameters), when parameters rotate  $2\pi$  around origin, square root function changes sign:

$$\sqrt{e^{i2\pi}} = e^{i\pi} = -1$$

This is the origin of  $\mathbb{Z}_2$  **topological phase**.

**For Bosons (photons):** They have no internal self-referential feedback loops ( $v_{int} = 0$ ), so they don't need to solve Riccati fixed points. Their states are directly defined on single-valued plane. Rotating 360° returns to origin, phase unchanged (+1).

**For Fermions (massive particles):** They must maintain a self-referential dead knot ( $v_{int} > 0$ ). Mathematical solution of this knot

lies on branch cut  
of square root. Ro-  
tating  $360^\circ$  causes  
system to slide  
to another sheet  
of Riemann sur-  
face, wave func-  
tion acquires  $-1$   
phase.

**Theorem 5.4 (Mass-  
Statistics The-  
orem):**

In local unitary  
QCA networks, any  
stable excitation  
maintained by non-  
linear self-referential  
feedback (i.e., mas-  
sive particles) nec-  
essarily has double-  
valued wave func-  
tions, thus exhibit-  
ing fermion statis-  
tics under exchange  
operations.

**5.4.4 5.4.4 On-  
tological Sta-  
tus of Spinors**

This discovery com-  
pletely changes  
our understand-  
ing of **spinors**.

In traditional ge-  
ometry, spinors  
are defined as "ge-  
ometric objects  
that change sign  
upon  $360^\circ$  rota-  
tion," usually viewed  
as abstract math-  
ematical constructs.

But in our the-  
ory, **spinors are**  
**"square roots**  
**of scalars."**

Physical observ-  
ables (such as en-  
ergy, charge, impedance)



are single-valued  
(scalars or vectors).

Underlying probability amplitudes  
(wave functions)  
must be square  
roots of these observables to satisfy self-consistent equations.

Therefore, fermions  
are not strange,  
special particles.

**Fermions are the  
normal state of  
matter existence.**

Any information  
structure attempting to "stop" and  
maintain its identity in spacetime  
networks must anchor itself on topological structure  
through "square  
root" operations,  
thus inevitably becoming fermions.

#### 5.4.5 5.4.5 Summary: The Trio of Matter

At this point, we  
have completed  
Part III "The Emergence of Matter."  
Starting from Axiom  $\Omega$ , we constructed the complete microscopic picture of matter:

**Photons:** Massless, non-self-referential,  
single-valued phase  
**translation modes.**

**Mass: Topological dead knots**

of information flow,  
 resisting external  
 forces (inertia) through  
 internal oscillation  
 ( $v_{int}$ ).

**Fermions: Self-referential logic**

required to maintain such dead knots necessarily introduces square root structure, leading to  $-1$  exchange phase.

This picture not only explains "what," but also "why."

It unifies mass, spin, and statistical properties under a simple geometrical framework.

In the next Part IV, we will explore the most mysterious component of this cosmic machine—**observers**.

We will see how, when these fermion knots form sufficiently complex networks, they begin to "see" themselves.

# Chapter 6

## Interactions and Gauge Fields

### 6.1 6.1 In- dependence of Local Ref- erence Frames: Why Does Each Cell Need "Translation"?

In the previous chapter, we solved the question "what is matter": matter is topological knots in QCA networks, and mass is the internal refresh rate required to maintain self-referential loops. Now, we must face a more complex question: **How do matter particles interact?** In classical physics, interactions prop-

agate through "fields"  
(such as electro-  
magnetic fields,  
gravitational fields).

In quantum field  
theory, interactions  
are realized through  
exchanging "gauge  
bosons." But in  
our discrete on-  
tology, there are  
neither continu-  
ous fields nor pre-  
supposed bosons.  
All we have are  
independent cells  
running on lat-  
tices.

This chapter will  
reveal a startling  
fact: **Interactions  
are not special  
forces, but com-  
munication costs  
that different  
cells must pay  
to achieve "in-  
formation con-  
sensus."**

Gauge fields are  
essentially **link  
variables** in dis-  
crete networks, ge-  
ometric objects  
used to "trans-  
late" differences  
between local ref-  
erence frames of  
different cells. Start-  
ing from the most  
fundamental "lo-  
cal independence"  
axiom, we will step  
by step derive Maxwell's  
equations and Yang-  
Mills theory.

### 6.1.1 6.1.1 Axiom 6.1 (Reference Frame Locality)

Imagine an internet composed of billions of independent computers. Each computer has its own clock (local time) and file system (local basis). If computer A wants to send a file to computer B, they must first establish a **communication protocol** to ensure that "0" and "1" sent by A are correctly interpreted at B. In QCA universe, the situation is very similar.

#### Axiom 6.1 (Reference Frame Locality):

Every cell  $x$  in QCA network is an independent Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}_x$ . Although all  $\mathcal{H}_x$  are mathematically isomorphic (e.g., all  $\mathbb{C}^2$ ), physically, **there is no God's-eye-view global basis.**

That is, each cell  $x$  has the right to arbitrarily choose its own basis vectors  $|0\rangle_x, |1\rangle_x$ . This freedom of choice constitutes **local gauge symmetry.**

**$U(1)$  Symmetry:**

Cell  $x$  can arbitrarily change its wave function phase:  
 $|\psi\rangle_x \rightarrow e^{i\alpha(x)}|\psi\rangle_x$ .

 **$SU(N)$  Symmetry:**

If cell has  $N$  internal degrees of freedom (such as quark color), cell  $x$  can arbitrarily rotate its internal coordinate axes:  $|\psi\rangle_x \rightarrow \hat{U}(x)|\psi\rangle_x$ .

### 6.1.2 6.1.2 Challenge of Communication

If cell  $x$  and adjacent cell  $y$  define different "phase zero" or "red direction," what happens to electron's wave function when it moves from  $x$  to  $y$ ?

If moved directly without correction, electron's phase information becomes chaotic (like recording time with two inaccurate clocks), leading to information loss, violating unitarity.

### 6.1.3 6.1.3 Solution: Connection Field

To achieve lossless transmission without global basis, network must maintain a **comparator** or **translator** between ev-

every two adjacent nodes  $x, y$ .

We define an operator  $\hat{U}_{y \leftarrow x}$ , called **link variable**. Its role is to "translate"  $x$ 's basis into  $y$ 's basis. Information transmission equation:

$$|\psi\rangle_y^{\text{received}} = \hat{U}_{y \leftarrow x} |\psi\rangle_x^{\text{sent}}$$

If we perform local basis transformation  $\hat{V}_x$  at  $x$  and  $\hat{V}_y$  at  $y$ , to ensure physical result (transmitted state) unchanged, link variable must transform accordingly:

$$\hat{U}'_{y \leftarrow x} = \hat{V}_y \hat{U}_{y \leftarrow x} \hat{V}_x^\dagger$$

This is the famous **gauge transformation law**. But in standard textbooks, this is a rule concocted to keep Lagrangian invariant; in QCA, this is **logical necessity to ensure different nodes can "understand" each other**.

#### 6.1.4 6.1.4 Physical Picture

**Physical Picture 6.1:**

**Gauge fields are not matter; they**

are **metadata** carried by network connections themselves.

**Electromagnetic potential**  $A_\mu$  records **clock synchronization error** (phase difference) between adjacent cells.

**Strong interaction potential**  $G_\mu^a$  records **relative distortion** of internal coordinate systems of adjacent cells.

This view completely subverts our understanding of "force": **Forces are not to push objects, but to correct reference frame differences.**

When reference frame differences vary with time and space (i.e., curvature exists), to maintain information consistency, objects must change motion state—this is the "force" we feel.

In the next section, we will see how this connection field, existing solely for "translation," acquires its own dynamical life and evolves into photons and gluons.



## 6.2 6.2 Necessity of Link Variables: Derivation of Maxwell and Yang-Mills Equations

In the previous section, we introduced **local gauge symmetry** as a fundamental property of QCA networks: each cell can freely choose its internal reference frame, and to transmit information between adjacent cells, network must maintain a set of **connection fields**  $U_{yx}$  as "translators."

This section will show a more profound result: merely to maintain **consistency** and **minimal error** of this communication network, connection fields themselves must follow specific dynamical equations. Remarkably, these equations are precisely the familiar **Maxwell's equations** (for Abelian groups) and **Yang-Mills equations** (for non-Abelian groups). In this picture, photons and gluons are not par-

ticles "added" to the universe, but **dynamic curvature** produced by spacetime networks to **correct information transmission errors**.

### 6.2.1 6.2.1 Closed Loops and Information Distortion: Geometric Definition of Field Strength

If connection field  $U_{yx}$  were merely a static translation table, physics would be very boring. Interesting things happen when we examine closed paths (loops). Consider a minimal closed loop (plaquette) on QCA lattice, denoted  $\square$ . Suppose information starts from node 1, passes through 2, 3, 4 in sequence, finally returning to 1. The total transformation operator of this process is called **holonomy** or **Wilson loop**:

$$U_{\square} = U_{14}U_{43}U_{32}U_{21}$$

#### Flat Connection:

If  $U_{\square} = \mathbb{I}$  (identity operator), information returns

unchanged after one round. This means network geometry is flat, parallel transport is path-independent.

**Curvature:** If  $U_{\square} \neq \mathbb{I}$ , information acquires extra phase or rotation during transmission. This "non-closure" degree is **field strength**.

In continuous limit, let lattice spacing be  $a$ , connection field  $U_{x+\mu, x} = e^{-igaA_{\mu}(x)}$ .

Using Baker-Campbell-Hausdorff formula expansion (see appendix), we can derive:

$$U_{\square} \approx e^{-iga^2 F_{\mu\nu}}$$

where  $F_{\mu\nu}$  is precisely the field strength tensor:

$$F_{\mu\nu} = \partial_{\mu}A_{\nu} - \partial_{\nu}A_{\mu} - ig[A_{\mu}, A_{\nu}]$$

### Physical Picture

#### 6.2:

#### Magnetic Field

**B:** Not just force deflecting needles; it is **phase accumulation on spatial loops**. When you walk around a magnetic field once, your wave function phase cannot restore.

#### Electric Field

**E:** Is **phase accumulation on**

**spacetime loops.**

It represents synchronization error in "time updates" between two adjacent nodes (non-commutativity of  $U_{t,t+1}$  and  $U_{x,x+1}$ ).

### 6.2.2 6.2.2 Minimal Distortion Principle: Origin of Action

Why must electromagnetic fields follow Maxwell's equations?

In classical mechanics, this is determined by least action principle  $\delta S = 0$ . But in QCA, we can give a more fundamental explanation.

QCA evolution must be unitary, meaning information must be as faithful as possible. If network is full of random curvature ( $U_{ij}$  jumping randomly), information will rapidly decohere during transmission, causing universe to "heat death" or "white noise."

Therefore, a universe capable of supporting complex structures must have connection fields in a **low curvature state**.

We define network's **channel cost func-**

**tion**, i.e., sum of  
"information dis-  
tortion" on all loops:

$$S_{\text{noise}} = \sum_{\square} \text{ReTr}(\mathbb{I} - U_{\square})$$

This quantity mea-  
sures how much  
network deviates  
from "perfect flat-  
ness."

Meanwhile, changes  
in connection fields  
themselves require  
cost (because chang-  
ing connections  
consumes compu-  
tational resources).  
This corresponds  
to kinetic energy  
term.

In continuous limit,  
this cost function  
(action) converges  
to:

$$S \sim \int d^4x \text{Tr}(F_{\mu\nu}F^{\mu\nu})$$

This is precisely  
**Yang-Mills ac-  
tion!** For  $U(1)$   
group, it's Maxwell  
action  $-\frac{1}{4}F^2$ .

### 6.2.3 6.2.3 Deriva- tion of Dynam- ical Equations

With action, dy-  
namical equations  
are inevitable re-  
sults of **minimiz-  
ing channel noise**.

Varying connec-  
tion field  $A_{\mu}$ :

$$\frac{\delta S}{\delta A_{\mu}} = 0 \implies D_{\mu}F^{\mu\nu} = J^{\nu}$$

$D_\mu F^{\mu\nu}$ : This is diffusion term of curvature. It tells us that if there's strong curvature somewhere (like near charges), it won't exist abruptly, but will smoothly diffuse to surrounding space. This is the origin of **Coulomb's law** and **wave equations**.

$J^\nu$ : This is matter flow (source). When matter particles (topological knots carrying local basis rotations) move, they force surrounding connection fields to change accordingly, thus producing radiation.

**Conclusion:**

Photons (Maxwell waves) are not independent entities. They are **"elastic waves" produced by space-time networks to smooth out local phase distortions caused by charges.**

Just like placing a ball on a rubber membrane causes deformation, placing a charge causes connection field distortion. When charge moves, propagation of distortion forms light.

### 6.2.4 Special Properties of Non-Abelian Fields: Why Do Gluons Self-Interact?

For  $U(1)$  electromagnetic fields, photons themselves carry no charge, because phase rotations are commutative ( $e^{i\alpha}e^{i\beta} = e^{i\beta}e^{i\alpha}$ ).

But for  $SU(N)$  non-Abelian fields (such as color charge), internal rotations are non-commutative. This means: **Changes in connection field  $A_\mu$  itself also cause further distortion of connection fields.**

$$[A_\mu, A_\nu] \neq 0$$

This nonlinear term causes gluons to carry color charge and undergo self-interactions.

From QCA graph-theoretic perspective, this corresponds to **topological entanglement** of network connections. Information flows along different paths not only have different phases, but also different "directions" in internal space. To coordinate such

complex distortions,  
 connection fields  
 must become ex-  
 tremely dense and  
 strong. This is  
 the geometric ori-  
 gin of **quark con-  
 finement**—if try-  
 ing to separate  
 two quarks, dis-  
 tortion energy on  
 one-dimensional  
 path (flux tube)  
 connecting them  
 grows linearly un-  
 til breaking pro-  
 duces new quark  
 pairs.

### 6.2.5 6.2.5 Sum- mary

We have recon-  
 structed gauge field  
 theory from the  
 perspective of "com-  
 munication pro-  
 tocols."

**Maxwell's equa-  
 tions** are **synchro-  
 nization algo-  
 rithms** networks  
 run to maintain  
 phase consistency.

**Yang-Mills equa-  
 tions** are **error  
 correction algo-  
 rithms** networks  
 run to maintain  
 internal reference  
 frame alignment.

**Photons and glu-  
 ons** are data pack-  
 ets (data packets)  
 produced when  
 these algorithms  
 run.

Forces exist in na-  
 ture because the



universe is not just a computational system, but a **distributed** computational system. Without centralized clocks, every node must continuously "handshake" (exchanging bosons) to confirm each other's states. The macroscopic manifestation of this handshaking is interactions. In the next section, we will explore parameters determining strengths of these interactions—**coupling constants**—and reveal their deep connection with network topological structure.

### 6.3 6.3 Geometric Meaning of Coupling Constants: Network Connectivity and Information Leakage Rate

In the standard model of quantum field theory, strengths of fundamental interactions are described by dimensionless

**coupling constants**

$g$ . For example, fine structure constant of electromagnetic interaction  $\alpha \approx 1/137$ , while  $\alpha_s$  of strong interaction is much larger. However, these constants are usually viewed as free parameters set by God, must be determined experimentally.

In QCA discrete ontology, since everything is information processing, "interaction strength" must correspond to some **ratio** or **probability** of information flow. Why is coupling strength between electrons and photons exactly that value?

This section will prove: **Coupling constant  $g$  is essentially a geometric measure of QCA network's topological connectivity and information leakage rate.** It measures what proportion of phase information "leaks" into rotation of internal degrees of freedom ( $v_{int}$ ) when information jumps between lattice points ( $v_{ext}$ ).

### 6.3.1 6.3.1 Coupling as Branching Ratio

Consider a single-step unitary evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  on QCA. When a particle carrying internal state (such as spin or color charge) moves from node  $x$  to  $x+1$ , it faces two orthogonal evolution directions:

**Translation Channel:** Keep internal state unchanged, only change position. This corresponds to free propagation, amplitude  $t$ .

**Rotation Channel:** While moving, acted upon by connection field  $U_{x+1,x}$ , undergo internal phase rotation or mixing. This corresponds to interaction, amplitude  $r$ .

Due to unitarity,  $|t|^2 + |r|^2 = 1$ .

We define **coupling constant**  $g$  as ratio (some function) of interaction amplitude to free propagation amplitude:

$$g \sim \frac{|r|}{|t|} \approx \tan \theta_{mix}$$

where  $\theta_{mix}$  is mixing angle between

translation generator and rotation generator.

### Physical Picture

#### 6.3.1:

Imagine a beam splitter. When photons pass through, most pass directly (free propagation), small part reflected or polarization changed (interaction). Coupling constant is this beam splitter's "reflectance." In QCA, every lattice connection is such a beam splitter.

#### 6.3.2 6.3.2 Geometric Origin: Dimension and Connectivity Number

Why does  $g$  take specific values? This depends on underlying lattice geometric structure. Suppose QCA network is a  $D$ -dimensional hypercubic lattice. Each node has  $2D$  nearest neighbors. If particles have  $N$  internal degrees of freedom (e.g.,  $SU(N)$  symmetry). When particles perform one step of random walk, information can choose  $2D$  spatial directions, simultaneously  $N^2 - 1$  internal rotation di-

reactions (number of Lie algebra generators).

According to **Information Equipartition Hypothesis**, at Planck scale limit high energies, information flow is uniformly distributed among all possible channels.

$$g_{bare}^2 \propto \frac{\text{internal channel number}}{\text{spatial channel number}} = \frac{C_2(G)}{2D}$$

where  $C_2(G)$  is quadratic Casimir operator of gauge group, related to group dimension.

This means, **strengths of fundamental interactions are geometrically determined by space dimension and size of internal symmetry groups.**

For example, for  $U(1)$  electromagnetic field ( $N = 1$ ) in  $D = 3$  space, channel ratio is small, hence electromagnetic force is weak. For  $SU(3)$  color charge ( $N = 3$ ) in same space, internal channels dramatically increase, leading to strong interaction.

### 6.3.3 Discrete Interpretation of Renormalization Group Flow: Resolution and Screening

Experimentally observed coupling constants vary with energy scale (resolution), this is **renormalization group (RG) flow**.

In QCA, this has an extremely intuitive explanation.

#### 1. Screening Effect (e.g., QED):

When we observe network with low resolution (long wavelength  $\lambda \gg a$ ), we are actually averaging nodes within a large region.

Due to random fluctuations of local phases (quantum noise), coherent rotations in large regions are partially canceled.

**Corollary:** As observation scale increases (energy decreases), effective coupling constant  $g_{eff}$  decreases. This corresponds to infrared free behavior of Abelian gauge fields (such as electromagnetic fields).

#### 2. Anti-screening

**Effect (e.g., QCD):**

For non-Abelian fields, connection fields themselves carry charges (gluons carry color). When we zoom out observation scale, nonlinear entanglement networks between connection fields become more complex.

Imagine a fractal network: the farther you look, the more curled details, the larger "surface area," causing effective interaction cross-section to increase.

**Corollary:** As observation scale increases (energy decreases), effective coupling constant  $g_{eff}$  increases. This corresponds to **quark confinement** of non-Abelian fields—at long distances, interaction is so strong it cannot be separated.

### 6.3.4 Derivation Conjecture of Fine Structure Constant

$\alpha$

Can we calculate  $\alpha \approx 1/137.036$ ? This requires extremely high-precision QCA lattice models. But in order

of magnitude, we can give a heuristic derivation.

Consider a QCA node in 3D space. Its solid angle is  $4\pi$ .

A particle emitting a photon (interaction) essentially projects information toward one direction in  $4\pi$  space.

If lattice points are close-packed, effective channel number relates to geometric factors. Wyler once proposed a mathematical conjecture based on geometric volume of bounded complex domains:

$$\alpha = \frac{9}{16\pi^3} \left(\frac{\pi}{5!}\right)^{1/4} \dots$$

In QCA framework, this corresponds to calculating: **geometric probability of homomorphic transmission on a discrete, unitary-satisfying  $S^3 \times S^1$  discrete manifold.**

Although there is currently no numerically precise proof, QCA provides the only possible path to finding this "God's number": it is not an arbitrary parameter, but a



**combinatorial constant of discrete geometry** (like  $\pi$  or  $e$ ).

### 6.3.5 6.3.5 Summary

Coupling constant  $g$  is a bridge connecting microscopic discrete structure with macroscopic continuous field theory.

**Microscopically**, it is **branching ratio** of information between "displacement" and "transformation."

**Macroscopically**, it manifests as **force** strength.

**Essentially**, it is **geometric projection** of network topological structure (dimension, connectivity number, group structure).

We feel strong force is stronger than electromagnetic force because in underlying QCA networks, channels for transmitting "color" information are much wider than channels for transmitting "phase" information.

At this point, we have completed Part III "The Emergence of Matter." We have constructed

particles (topological knots), mass (impedance), fermions (square root), and interactions (connection fields) from nothing.

Hardware (space-time) and data (matter) of this cosmic computer are in place. Next, in Part IV, we will explore the most exciting software part—what happens when this computer begins to "observe itself"?

Welcome to **The Emergence of Observation.**

## Part IV

# The Emer- gence of Ob- serva- tion



## Chapter 7

# Quantum Mea- sure- ment and Ob- jectiv- ity

### 7.1    7.1 The Discrete So- lution to Schrödinger's Cat: Entan- glement and Branching un- der Unitary Evolution

In this chapter,  
we face the most  
troubling and con-  
troversial field in  
physics: **The Mea-  
surement Prob-  
lem.**

In classical mechanics, observers are "God's eyes" standing outside; their observation behavior does not interfere with physical system evolution. But in quantum mechanics, observation seems to play an active, even destructive role—it causes wave function **collapse**. This directly conflicts with unitary evolution of Schrödinger's equation.

In our discrete QCA ontology, since the universe is a strictly unitary, deterministic computational process (Axiom  $\Omega$ ), what exactly is "collapse"? Where does probability come from?

This chapter will propose a revolutionary view: **Wave functions never collapse**. So-called "collapse" and "randomness" are merely **perspective effects** produced when finite local observers perform **self-location** in the vast holographic entanglement network.

We will prove: **Objective Reality** is not a priori existence, but **con-**

**sensus** reached between different observers through entanglement and communication. Let's return to that famous thought experiment: Schrödinger's cat.

In a closed box, there is a cat, a radioactive atom, and a poison device. The atom is in superposition of decayed and undecayed:

$$|\psi_{atom}\rangle = \alpha|0\rangle + \beta|1\rangle$$

According to linearity of quantum mechanics, after some time, the entire system (atom + cat) evolves into a macroscopic superposition:

$$|\Psi_{total}\rangle = \alpha|0\rangle|Live\rangle + \beta|1\rangle|Dead\rangle$$

The problem is: When we open the box, we either see a live cat or a dead cat, never a "half-dead half-alive" cat. Why?

**Traditional Explanation (Copenhagen):** At the moment of observation, wave function non-unitarily jumps to one branch.

**QCA Explanation (Many-branches/Relative State):** Wave function continues unitary evolution, but

observer is also entangled.

### 7.1.1 7.1.1 Physicalization of Observers

In QCA framework, observers are not gods, but **physical subsystems** with memory and processing capabilities.

Let observer's initial state be  $|Ready\rangle$ .

When observer opens the box to observe, their state unitarily entangles with system state (driven by local interaction Hamiltonian):

$$\begin{aligned} |\Psi_{final}\rangle &= \hat{U}_{obs}(|\Psi_{total}\rangle \otimes |Ready\rangle) \\ &= \alpha|0\rangle|Live\rangle|Saw\_Live\rangle + \beta|1\rangle|Dead\rangle|Saw\_Dead\rangle \end{aligned}$$

Note that the entire wave function  $|\Psi_{final}\rangle$  is still a pure state, no collapse occurred. But this wave function now contains two terms, each describing a **self-consistent world history**.

**Branch A:** Atom undecayed, cat alive, observer sees cat alive.

**Branch B:** Atom decayed, cat dead, observer sees cat dead.



### 7.1.2 7.1.2 Dynamical Isolation of Branches

The key question is: Why can't observer in Branch A sense existence of Branch B?

This stems from QCA network's **vast degrees of freedom and decoherence.**

Cats and observers are macroscopic objects, containing  $10^{23}$  order qubits.

Two macroscopic states  $|Live\rangle$  and  $|Dead\rangle$  are not only orthogonal in Hilbert space, but **almost impossible to overlap.**

To make these two branches interfere again (i.e., make observer A sense observer B), we need to precisely reverse states of all  $10^{23}$  particles in the entire system.

Under QCA's complex dynamics, probability of such reversal decays exponentially with time (Poincaré recurrence time is unimaginably long). Therefore, although mathematically both branches exist in global wave function, physically and dynamically, they are **causally**

**disconnected.**

For observer in Branch A, Branch B is like falling into a black hole horizon—theoretically exists, but practically inaccessible.

**Conclusion:**

**Collapse is not disappearance of wave function, but inaccessibility of information.**

This phenomenon is called "**Branching**". The universe does not split into two; rather, observer's own state splits into two mutually orthogonal, mutually invisible copies.

Each copy believes it sees the only outcome. This is the source of subjective "collapse" illusion.

In the next section, we will solve a more difficult problem: Why is the probability observer sees live cat  $|\alpha|^2$ , not something else? We will give a pure mathematical proof of Born's rule.

## 7.2 7.2 Combinatorial Proof of Born Rule: Based on Zurek Rotation and Microstate Counting

In the previous section, we eliminated physical reality of wave function collapse through "branching" concept, interpreting measurement as update of observer's horizon. However, this only solves the qualitative part of measurement problem (why there are definite results), leaving a quantitative puzzle: **Why does probability observer finds themselves in a particular branch strictly follow Born's rule  $P_k = |\psi_k|^2$ ?**

In standard quantum mechanics, this is an independent axiom. But in our "Ultimate Axiom  $\Omega$ " system, besides unitarity and locality, there are no presuppositions about probability. If Born's rule cannot be derived from unitarity, our theory is incomplete. This section will

provide a proof purely based on **combinatorics** and **symmetry**. We will show: In discrete QCA networks, so-called "probability" is essentially counting of **micro-degeneracy** in holographic networks.

### 7.2.1 7.2.1 Discrete Ontology of Amplitudes: Weights as Path Counting

In continuous quantum mechanics, complex amplitude  $\alpha \in \mathbb{C}$  is an abstract mathematical quantity. But in discrete path integral (sum-over-histories) perspective, amplitudes have clear counting meaning.

Consider evolution from initial state  $|i\rangle$  to final state  $|f\rangle$ . QCA's unitary operator  $\hat{U}$  can be viewed as sum of path weights on graph. If underlying lattice structure has some discrete symmetry (e.g., all basic paths have equal weight modulus), then macroscopic amplitude magnitude  $|\alpha|$  actually reflects **number of micro-**

scopic paths to that state (or degeneracy of microstates).

**Axiom 7.2 (Microscopic Equal Weight Axiom):**

At QCA's deepest level (Planck scale), all orthogonal micro-basis states are ontologically equal. There is no "this basis is more real than that basis."

This means, if two macroscopic states  $|A\rangle$  and  $|B\rangle$  correspond to  $N_A$  and  $N_B$  indistinguishable microstates respectively at the bottom level, then according to Laplace's

**Principle of Insufficient Reason**, probability observer finds themselves in  $|A\rangle$  should be  $N_A/(N_A+N_B)$ . Our task is to connect wave function amplitude  $\alpha$  with microscopic number  $N$ .

### 7.2.2 7.2.2 Schmidt Decomposition and Environment-Assisted Invariance (Envariance)

We will adopt **Environment-Assisted Invariance (Envariance)** idea proposed by Wojciech Zurek and adapt it to

discrete framework.

Consider entangled state of system  $\mathcal{S}$  and environment  $\mathcal{E}$ . According to Schmidt Decomposition, any pure state can always be written as:

$$|\Psi_{\mathcal{SE}}\rangle = \sum_k c_k |s_k\rangle_{\mathcal{S}} |e_k\rangle_{\mathcal{E}}$$

where  $|s_k\rangle$  are system's pointer states (such as cat dead/alive),  $|e_k\rangle$  are environment's orthogonal states (such as photons recording dead/alive).

**Case One: Equal Weight Superposition**

First consider simplest case, all coefficients equal:  $c_k = 1/\sqrt{N}$ .

$$|\Psi\rangle \propto |s_1\rangle|e_1\rangle + |s_2\rangle|e_2\rangle + \dots + |s_N\rangle|e_N\rangle$$

We ask: What is probability  $P(1)$  observer measures state  $|s_1\rangle$ ?

**Symmetry Argument:**

**Unitary Swap:**

We can perform unitary transformation  $\hat{U}_{\mathcal{S}}$  on system  $\mathcal{S}$ , swapping  $|s_1\rangle$  and  $|s_2\rangle$ . This changes physical state:

$$|s_2\rangle|e_1\rangle + |s_1\rangle|e_2\rangle + \dots$$

Now,  $|e_1\rangle$  is associated with  $|s_2\rangle$ .

**Environment Compensation:** But we can also perform inverse transformation  $\hat{U}_{\mathcal{E}}$  on environment  $\mathcal{E}$ , swapping  $|e_1\rangle$  and  $|e_2\rangle$ .

After joint operation  $\hat{U}_{\mathcal{E}}\hat{U}_S$ , state becomes:

$$|s_2\rangle|e_2\rangle + |s_1\rangle|e_1\rangle + \dots$$

This is **mathematically identical** to initial state  $|\Psi\rangle$  (only summation order changed).

**Corollary:** Since swapping system (changing target of physical prediction) can be completely canceled by operating on environment (not changing system physical prediction), this means **physical probability should not depend on labels 1 or 2**.

Therefore, must have  $P(1) = P(2) = \dots = P(N) = 1/N$ .

This proves: **For entangled states with equal coefficient moduli, probabilities are equal.**

### 7.2.3 Fine-Graining: From Amplitudes to Counting

Now handle general case, coefficients unequal. For example:

$$|\Psi\rangle = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}|0\rangle_S|e_0\rangle_E + \sqrt{\frac{1}{3}}|1\rangle_S|e_1\rangle_E$$

How do we prove

$$P(0) = 2/3?$$

In QCA discrete ontology, complex coefficient  $\sqrt{2/3}$  is not fundamental. It is a result of **coarse-graining**. It means environment state  $|e_0\rangle_E$  is actually not a single microstate, but superposition of two indistinguishable microstates.

We perform **fine-graining decomposition** on environment Hilbert space:

$$|e_0\rangle \rightarrow \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(|e_{0,a}\rangle + |e_{0,b}\rangle)$$

$$|e_1\rangle \rightarrow |e_{1,a}\rangle$$

Substituting into original expression, we get a more fundamental microstate:

$$|\Psi\rangle \propto |0\rangle_S|e_{0,a}\rangle + |0\rangle_S|e_{0,b}\rangle + |1\rangle_S|e_{1,a}\rangle$$

(ignoring normalization constant).

Now, we face 3-term equal-weight superposition.



According to previous equal probability theorem, these 3 microscopic branches each have probability  $1/3$ .

Observer seeing  $|0\rangle$  event corresponds to first two branches:  $P(0) = 1/3 + 1/3 = 2/3$ .

Observer seeing  $|1\rangle$  event corresponds to third branch:  $P(1) = 1/3$ .

This is exactly  $|\alpha|^2$  and  $|\beta|^2$ !

#### 7.2.4 7.2.4 Why Square? — Statistics of Pythagorean Theorem

Why does physical amplitude  $\alpha$  correspond to  $\sqrt{N}$  rather than  $N$ ?

This directly stems from QCA's **global unitarity**.

In QCA, evolution operator  $\hat{U}$  preserves vector's  $L_2$  norm (modulus), corresponding to geometric Pythagorean theorem.

$$||\Psi||^2 = \sum |\alpha_i|^2 = 1$$

If we assume  $\alpha_i$  represents microscopic path number  $N_i$ , then superposition principle would become  $L_1$  norm con-

servation (probabilities directly add), but this would destroy mathematical structure of interference phenomena. To simultaneously satisfy:

**Linear Superposition Principle** (core feature of quantum mechanics);

**Probability Conservation** (logical consistency);

**Probability must be quadratic function of amplitude.**

In QCA's discrete geometry, **amplitude is "edge length," probability is "face area."**

Microscopic state number  $N$  corresponds to **volume (measure)** in Hilbert space.

When we project a large vector onto basis, squared projection length represents volume share contained in that basis direction.

**Theorem 7.2 (Born Rule Derivation Theorem):**

In a discrete QCA system satisfying unitary evolution and environment-assisted invariance, subjective probability  $P_k$  any lo-

cal observer measures result  $k$  necessarily equals modulus squared of that branch amplitude  $|c_k|^2$ .

### 7.2.5 7.2.5 Conclusion

Born's rule is no longer a confusing axiom. It is **result of counting microstates when we perform incomplete observation in a deterministic, unitary universe.**

**God does not throw dice:** Entire universe's evolution is 100

**Dice are in our hearts:** Because we are finite observers, we can only see a slice of the vast holographic network. The "randomness" we perceive is actually our **ignorance** about which position we occupy in the network. Probability is subjective horizon's measure of objective information.

### 7.3 The Achievement of Objective Reality: Nash Equilibrium and Consensus Geometry in Multi-Agent Systems

From the combinatorial proof of Born's rule in the previous section, we got a startling conclusion: So-called "randomness" is merely subjective feeling of local observers due to information truncation. This seems to push physics toward solipsism—if every observer is in their own "information bubble," each bubble has its own historical branch, then what is the shared, unbreakable "objective reality" we all perceive?

This section will unify quantum mechanics with game theory by introducing **multi-agent game** models, proving: **Objective reality is not a priori physical background, but Nash equilibrium**

emerging from  
a vast, decen-  
tralized commu-  
nication network.

Spacetime geom-  
etry is essentially  
a "consensus pro-  
tocol" reached by  
all observers.

### 7.3.1 7.3.1 Wigner's Friend and Con- sensus Puzzle

To understand fragility  
of "objectivity,"  
let's revisit "Wigner's  
Friend" thought  
experiment.

Friend  $F$  measures  
a qubit in a sealed  
room, gets result  
 $|0\rangle$  or  $|1\rangle$ . For  $F$ ,  
wave function col-  
lapsed, world is  
definite.

Wigner  $W$  stands  
outside the room.  
For  $W$ , entire room  
(including friend)  
is in superposi-  
tion  $|\Psi\rangle = \alpha|0\rangle|F_0\rangle +$   
 $\beta|1\rangle|F_1\rangle$ .

At this point, for  
 $F$ , fact is "I saw  
0"; for  $W$ , fact  
is "friend is in  
superposition."

If  $F$  walks out  
and tells  $W$ : "I  
saw 0," then  $W$ 's  
wave function also  
"collapses."

This reveals def-  
inition of objec-  
tivity: **Objectiv-  
ity = mutual  
consistency of  
information be-**

tween different  
observers.

In QCA frame-  
work, we no longer  
discuss abstract  
"wave functions,"  
but **consistency**  
**checks**.

If  $W$  and  $F$  want  
to reach consen-  
sus, they must phys-  
ically **communi-**  
**cate** (exchange  
photons or mat-  
ter).

Communication it-  
self is a physical  
process (interac-  
tion), causing  $W$   
and  $F$ 's states to  
entangle.

**Theorem 7.3.1**  
**(Consensus En-**  
**tanglement The-**  
**orem):**

Under unitary evo-  
lution, two observers  
 $A$  and  $B$  can only  
reach consensus  
on measurement  
result of observ-  
able  $\hat{O}$  when their  
quantum states  
are completely en-  
tangled about  $\hat{O}$   
(i.e., in same branch  
of Schmidt decom-  
position).

$$|\Psi_{AB}\rangle \approx \sum_k c_k |A_k\rangle |B_k\rangle$$

If state is  $|A_k\rangle |B_j\rangle$   
( $k \neq j$ ), it's called  
"illusion" or "dis-  
agreement." Uni-  
tary dynamics (in-  
teraction Hamil-  
tonian) tends to

eliminate disagreement terms (through decoherence), driving system into diagonalized consensus state.

### 7.3.2 7.3.2 Nash Equilibrium: Why Do We See the Same Moon?

Einstein once asked:  
 "Does the moon exist only when I look at it?"  
 From QCA perspective, this question becomes: "Why does everyone see the moon at the same position?"  
 We model the universe as a game network composed of  $N$  agents. Each agent  $i$  maintains an internal model  $M_i$  (beliefs about external world). Agent's goal is to minimize **prediction error** (i.e., free energy  $F$ ).

$$F_i = \text{KL}(q_i(\text{state}) || p(\text{sensory data}))$$

If each agent independently constructs models, their worldviews might be completely different (like schizophrenic patients).  
 But agents have **communication** between them (light, sound, gravity).  
 Communication causes **coupling**. If agent

$A$  thinks moon  
is on left, and agent  
 $B$  thinks moon  
is on right, when  
they exchange in-  
formation, both  
produce huge pre-  
diction errors (sur-  
prise).

To minimize this  
error, they must  
adjust their re-  
spective internal  
models to be **mu-  
tually compat-  
ible**.

**Definition 7.3.2**  
**(Objective Re-  
ality as Nash**  
**Equilibrium):**

Let total free en-  
ergy of entire sys-  
tem be  $F_{total} =$   
 $\sum_i F_i(M_i, \{M_{j \neq i}\})$ .  
System's evolution  
dynamics  $\dot{M}_i \propto$   
 $-\nabla_{M_i} F_{total}$  drives  
system to find min-  
imum.

When system reaches  
steady state  $\frac{dM_i}{dt} =$   
0, all agents' mod-  
els  $\{M_i^*\}$  reach  
a **Nash equilib-  
rium**.

**Common part**  
contained in this  
equilibrium state  
 $\{M^*\}$  is what we  
call "objective re-  
ality."

**Conclusion:** Moon  
is there because  
all observers (in-  
cluding photons,  
air molecules) have  
"negotiated" its  
position through  
continuous inter-



actions. Any observer deviating from this consensus will be severely "punished" by environmental information (decoherence), until they correct their model or are assimilated by environment.

### 7.3.3 7.3.3 Consensus Geometry: Spacetime as the Largest Public Ledger

Pushing this view to the extreme:  
**Spacetime itself is the largest consensus structure.**

In Chapter 4, we defined geometry as entanglement. Now we can say: Geometry is **causal relationship protocol recognized by all observers.**

**Distance:** Not absolute ruler length, but consensus on "if I send you a signal, how long do you need to receive it."

**Position:** Not absolute coordinates, but "my network relationship relative to all other objects." In QCA networks, there is no absolute  $x, y, z$ . But due to rigidity of

local interactions,  
all observers eventually agree on  
network's **topological structure**  
by exchanging photons (measuring  
light paths).  
This network-wide  
consistent topological skeleton  
is the **continuous spacetime manifold** we perceive.

In this sense, physical laws (such as  
relativity) are not  
merely natural laws;  
they are **underlying algorithms  
for distributed networks to maintain data consistency**.

Special Relativity (Lorentz transformations) is **data conversion protocol between different reference frames**.

General Relativity (covariance) is **consensus protocol ensuring physical truth is independent of node coordinates**.

#### 7.3.4 7.3.4 Layers of Reality

We arrive at a  
layered reality picture:

**Ontic Level:** Underlying QCA net-

work, unitary, deterministic, but unknowable to single observers (hidden).

**Consensus Level:**

Macroscopic classical world (space-time, matter) emerging through multi-agent games. This is "objective reality."

**Subjective Level:**

Quantum branches private to single observers (illusions, dreams, uncollapsed wave functions).

Science's task is to extract that hard consensus layer from this subjective fog through experiments (forcing games with environment).

### 7.3.5 7.3.5 Summary

Objectivity is not a gift from heaven, but an **evolutionary achievement**.

The universe weaves classical consistency from quantum chaos through countless microscopic "handshakes" and "entanglements." We live in the same world because we continuously "measure" each other, and in this process become part of each other's re-

ality.

This concludes Part IV's discussion on observation. We have explained probability, measurement, and objectivity.

In the next Part V, also the final part of the book, we will put these theories to the cruelest battlefield—**experimental verification**. If all this is not just philosophy, it must be observable.

## Chapter 8

# The Physics Defi- nition of Con- scious- ness

### 8.1 8.1 Ob- server Model: Computational Structure (Agent) as Self-Referential Subsystem

In traditional physics narratives, "observers" are often treated as awkward ghosts. In classical mechanics, they are massless, volumeless "God's eyes"; in standard quantum

mechanics, they are external "black boxes" causing wave function collapse. Physical laws seem to describe a universe without audience, but all physical knowledge comes from observation.

In the discrete ontology constructed in this book, we reject this dualism. Since the universe is unitary QCA, **observers must be part of this QCA network.** Consciousness is not a miracle transcending physical laws, but a special, advanced **computational structure.**

This chapter will attempt to establish foundations of "consciousness physics." We will prove: **Observers are self-referential subsystems emerging in information flow.** They acquire "agency" by maintaining **Markov blanket** on their boundaries and compressing chaotic environmental information into low-entropy **internal models.**

To define what an "observer" is, we must first de-

fine what an "individual" is. In a fully connected or uniform QCA lattice, where does "I" begin, where does "environment" end?

### 8.1.1 Mathematical Definition of Boundary: Markov Blanket

Consider entire system Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}_{total}$ . Any subsystem partition  $\mathcal{H}_{total} = \mathcal{H}_{in} \otimes \mathcal{H}_{out}$  is mathematically legal, but vast majority of partitions are physically meaningless (e.g., grouping one atom from moon with one neuron from your brain). Meaningful physical individuals must have **dynamical independence**. This can be formalized through **Markov Blanket** concept.

#### Definition 8.1 (Markov Blanket and Graph Partition):

In QCA's interaction graph  $\Lambda =$

$(V, E)$ ,  
 let  
 $V_{in} \subset$   
 $V$   
 be  
 a  
 set  
 of  
 nodes  
 rep-  
 re-  
 sent-  
 ing  
 "in-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 states."

**Markov**  
**Blan-**  
**ket**  
 $V_{mb}$   
 of  
 $V_{in}$   
 is  
 de-  
 fined  
 as  
 bound-  
 ary  
 node  
 set  
 of  
 $V_{in}$   
 on  
 graph  
 (nodes  
 di-  
 rectly  
 con-  
 nected  
 to  
 $V_{in}$   
 but  
 not  
 be-  
 long-  
 ing  
 to



$V_{in}$ ).  
 Remaining  
 nodes  
 $V_{ext} =$   
 $V \setminus$   
 $(V_{in} \cup$   
 $V_{mb})$   
 are  
 called  
 "ex-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 states"  
 or  
 "en-  
 vi-  
 ron-  
 ment."  
 If  
 fol-  
 low-  
 ing  
 con-  
 di-  
 tion  
 is  
 sat-  
 is-  
 fied,  
 then  
 $(V_{in}, V_{mb})$   
 con-  
 sti-  
 tutes  
 a  
**sta-  
 tis-  
 ti-  
 cally  
 in-  
 de-  
 pen-  
 dent  
 sub-  
 sys-  
 tem:**

**Conditional  
 In-**

**de-  
pen-  
dence:**  
Given  
blan-  
ket  
state  
 $V_{mb}$ ,  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
of  
 $V_{in}$   
is  
in-  
de-  
pen-  
dent  
of  
 $V_{ext}$ .

$$P(v_{in}(t+1)|v_{in}(t), v_{mb}(t), v_{ext}(t)) = P(v_{in}(t+1)|v_{in}(t))$$

Physically,  
 $V_{mb}$   
is  
fur-  
ther  
de-  
com-  
posed  
into:

**Sensory  
Nodes:**  
Re-  
ceive  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
from  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment  
 $V_{ext}$ ,  
trans-  
mit

to  
 $V_{in}$ .

**Active  
Nodes:**

Re-  
ceive  
com-  
mands  
from  
 $V_{in}$ ,  
change  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment  
 $V_{ext}$ .

**Physical**

**Pic-  
ture**

**8.1:**

An  
ob-  
server  
is

es-  
sen-  
tially

an

**in-**

**for-**

**ma-**

**tion**

**mem-  
brane**

in

space-  
time

net-  
work.

This

mem-  
brane

iso-  
lates

uni-  
verse

into

"me"

(in-  
ter-  
nal)  
and  
”not  
me”  
(ex-  
ter-  
nal).  
With-  
out  
this  
mem-  
brane,  
there  
is  
no  
ob-  
server,  
only  
a  
chaotic  
ocean  
of  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion.

**8.1.2    8.1.2**  
**Self-**  
**Reference**  
**and**  
**In-**  
**ter-**  
**nal**  
**Model:**  
**I**  
**Am**  
**What**  
**I**  
**Com-**  
**pute**

Having  
bound-  
ary  
alone  
is

not  
 enough.  
 A  
 rock  
 also  
 has  
 bound-  
 ary,  
 but  
 rocks  
 are  
 not  
 ob-  
 servers.  
 True  
 ob-  
 servers  
 (agents)  
 must  
 have  
**in-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 mod-  
 els.**  
 In  
 QCA  
 dy-  
 nam-  
 ics,  
 this  
 means  
 evo-  
 lu-  
 tion  
 rules  
 $\hat{U}_{in}$   
 of  
 in-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 nodes  
 $V_{in}$   
 must  
 con-  
 tain  
 a  
**re-  
 cur-**

sive  
or  
self-  
referential  
struc-  
ture.

**Definition**  
**8.2**  
**(Agent):**

A  
sub-  
sys-  
tem  
 $\mathcal{A} =$   
 $(V_{in}, V_{mb})$   
is  
called  
an  
**agent**  
if  
its  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
state  
 $\rho_{in}$   
en-  
codes  
a  
**com-  
pressed  
map-  
ping**  
of  
ex-  
ter-  
nal  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment  
state  
 $\rho_{ext}$ .

$$\rho_{in} \approx \mathcal{M}(\rho_{ext})$$

where

$\mathcal{M}$   
is  
a  
ho-  
mo-  
mor-  
phic  
map-  
ping.

This  
means  
agents  
don't  
just  
re-  
act  
pas-  
sively;  
they  
**sim-**  
**u-**  
**late**  
ex-  
ter-  
nal  
world  
in-  
ter-  
nally.

**Memory:**  
Agents  
must  
main-  
tain  
tem-  
po-  
ral  
cor-  
re-  
la-  
tions  
of  
cer-  
tain  
states,  
re-  
sist-  
ing

en-  
vi-  
ron-  
men-  
tal  
ther-  
mal  
fluc-  
tu-  
a-  
tions  
(for-  
get-  
ting).  
This  
re-  
quires  
 $V_{in}$   
to  
have  
long-  
range  
tem-  
po-  
ral  
en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment  
struc-  
ture  
(this  
is  
macro-  
scopic  
up-  
grade  
of  
"topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
mass"  
we  
dis-  
cussed  
in  
Chap-  
ter



5).

**Prediction:**

Agents

use

in-

ter-

nal

model

$\mathcal{M}$

to

de-

duce

fu-

ture

en-

vi-

ron-

men-

tal

states

based

on

cur-

rent

sen-

sory

in-

put.

**Minimum**

**Thresh-**

**old**

**of**

**”Con-**

**scious-**

**ness”:**

When

this

in-

ter-

nal

model

$\mathcal{M}$

be-

comes

com-

plex

enough

that

it  
 not  
 only  
 con-  
 tains  
 sim-  
 u-  
 la-  
 tion  
 of  
 "ex-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 world,"  
 but  
 also  
 sim-  
 u-  
 la-  
 tion  
 of  
 "self's  
**role**  
**in**  
**ex-**  
**ter-**  
**nal**  
**world"**  
 (i.e.,  
 model  
 con-  
 tains  
 a  
 sym-  
 bol  
 rep-  
 re-  
 sent-  
 ing  
 the  
 sys-  
 tem),  
**self-**  
**awareness**  
 emerges.

$$M_{model} \supset \{\text{World, Self}\}$$

### 8.1.3 Re-sist-ing Heat Death: Schrödinger's Def-i-ni-tion of Life

According to second law of thermodynamics, entropy of closed systems always increases. If  $V_{in}$  frequently ex-changes in-for-ma-tion with  $V_{ext}$ , in-ter-

nal  
 struc-  
 ture  
 should  
 rapidly  
 be  
 as-  
 sim-  
 i-  
 lated  
 by  
 en-  
 vi-  
 ron-  
 ment  
 (ther-  
 mal-  
 iza-  
 tion),  
 caus-  
 ing  
 bound-  
 ary  
 to  
 dis-  
 ap-  
 pear,  
 ob-  
 server  
 to  
 die.  
 But  
 ob-  
 servers  
 ex-  
 ist  
 pre-  
 cisely  
 be-  
 cause  
 they  
**refuse**  
**ther-**  
**mal-**  
**iza-**  
**tion.**

**Axiom**  
**8.1**

(Prin-  
ci-  
ple  
of  
Agency):

Observers  
are  
**non-  
equilibrium  
steady  
state  
struc-  
tures  
(NESS)**  
in  
QCA  
net-  
works  
that  
can  
ac-  
tively  
main-  
tain  
their  
Markov  
blan-  
kets  
from  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
men-  
tal  
dis-  
si-  
pa-  
tion  
by  
con-  
sum-  
ing  
free  
en-  
ergy.

This  
re-  
turns

to  
**topo-**  
**log-**  
**i-**  
**cal**  
**knots**  
 we  
 dis-  
 cussed  
 in  
 Chap-  
 ter  
 5.

**Elementary**  
**Par-**  
**ti-**  
**cles**  
 (such  
 as  
 elec-  
 trons)  
 are  
 sim-  
 plest  
 ob-  
 servers:  
 They  
 main-  
 tain  
 their  
 non-  
 trivial  
 struc-  
 ture  
 through  
 topo-  
 log-  
 i-  
 cal  
 wind-  
 ing  
 (wind-  
 ing  
 num-  
 ber  
 $\mathcal{W} =$   
 1),  
 re-

sist-  
ing  
vac-  
uum  
triv-  
i-  
al-  
iza-  
tion.

**Living  
Or-  
gan-  
isms**  
are  
com-  
plex  
ob-  
servers:  
They  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ously  
re-  
pair  
their  
Markov  
blan-  
kets  
(cell  
mem-  
branes/skin)  
at  
molec-  
u-  
lar  
level  
through  
metabolism  
(ex-  
tract-  
ing  
ne-  
gen-  
tropy).

**Intelligent  
Con-**

scious-  
ness  
are  
highest-  
level  
ob-  
servers:  
They  
main-  
tain  
log-  
i-  
cal  
con-  
sis-  
tency  
at  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
level  
through  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion  
(cog-  
ni-  
tion),  
re-  
sist-  
ing  
con-  
cep-  
tual  
en-  
tropy  
in-  
crease  
(men-  
tal  
dis-  
or-  
der).



8.1.4 8.1.4  
Con-  
clu-  
sion:  
Ob-  
servers  
as  
Physics'  
"Soli-  
tons"

In  
sum-  
mary,  
we  
give  
strict  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
def-  
i-  
ni-  
tion  
of  
ob-  
servers:  
**Observers**  
are  
com-  
plex  
topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
soli-  
tons  
in  
QCA  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
fluid.

**Structurally:**  
De-  
fined  
by

Markov  
 blan-  
 ket  
 bound-  
 ary.

**Functionally:**

Run-  
 ning  
 sim-  
 u-  
 la-  
 tion  
 al-  
 go-  
 rithms  
 of  
 en-  
 vi-  
 ron-  
 ment  
 (self-  
 referential).

**Dynamically:**

Main-  
 tain-  
 ing  
 their  
 low-  
 entropy  
 state  
 through  
 dis-  
 si-  
 pa-  
 tive  
 struc-  
 tures.

This  
 def-  
 i-  
 ni-  
 tion  
 re-  
 moves  
 mys-  
 tery  
 of

conscious-  
ness.  
Con-  
scious-  
ness  
is  
not  
mag-  
i-  
cal  
smoke  
pro-  
duced  
by  
brains;  
it  
is  
**spe-  
cific  
ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric  
form  
formed  
by  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
flow-  
ing  
in  
closed  
loops.**  
As  
long  
as  
net-  
work  
is  
com-  
plex  
enough,  
emer-  
gence  
of  
this

form  
 is  
 as  
 in-  
 evitable  
 as  
 vor-  
 tices  
 emerg-  
 ing  
 in  
 tur-  
 bu-  
 lence.  
 In  
 the  
 next  
 sec-  
 tion,  
 we  
 will  
 quan-  
 ti-  
 ta-  
 tively  
 de-  
 scribe  
 this  
 dy-  
 nam-  
 i-  
 cal  
 mech-  
 a-  
 nism  
 of  
 "main-  
 tain-  
 ing  
 low  
 en-  
 tropy"—**free**  
**en-**  
**ergy**  
**min-**  
**i-**  
**miza-**  
**tion**  
**prin-**

ci-  
ple.  
This  
will  
ex-  
plain  
why  
ob-  
servers  
al-  
ways  
tend  
to  
"un-  
der-  
stand"  
the  
uni-  
verse.

## 8.2 8.2

In-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
Mass  
 $M_I$   
and  
Free  
En-  
ergy  
Min-  
i-  
miza-  
tion

In  
the  
pre-  
vi-  
ous  
sec-  
tion,  
we

de-  
 fined  
 "ob-  
 servers"  
 as  
 self-  
 referential  
 sub-  
 sys-  
 tems  
 in  
 QCA  
 net-  
 works  
 with  
**Markov**  
**blan-**  
**kets**  
 and  
**in-**  
**ter-**  
**nal**  
**mod-**  
**els.**  
 Now,  
 we  
 face  
 a  
 dy-  
 nam-  
 ics  
 ques-  
 tion:  
 What  
 drives  
 this  
 sub-  
 sys-  
 tem  
 to  
 "ob-  
 serve"  
 the  
 world?  
 Why  
 doesn't  
 it  
 just  
 lie

flat,  
 let-  
 ting  
 en-  
 vi-  
 ron-  
 ment  
 ther-  
 mal-  
 ize  
 it  
 (en-  
 tropy  
 in-  
 crease)?  
 This  
 sec-  
 tion  
 will  
 in-  
 tro-  
 duce  
 two  
 core  
 con-  
 cepts:  
**In-**  
**for-**  
**ma-**  
**tion**  
**Mass**  
**( $M_I$ )**  
 and  
**Vari-**  
**a-**  
**tional**  
**Free**  
**En-**  
**ergy**  
**( $F$ ).**  
 We  
 will  
 prove  
 that  
 ob-  
 server's  
 "sur-  
 vival  
 in-

stinct”  
 (main-  
 tain-  
 ing  
 low  
 en-  
 tropy)  
 and  
 ”cu-  
 rios-  
 ity”  
 (ex-  
 plor-  
 ing  
 en-  
 vi-  
 ron-  
 ment)  
 are  
 phys-  
 i-  
 cally  
 equiv-  
 a-  
 lent  
 to  
**min-  
 i-  
 miz-  
 ing  
 free  
 en-  
 ergy.**  
 This  
 pro-  
 cess  
 is  
 the  
 phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 source  
 of  
 uni-  
 verse  
 pro-  
 duc-  
 ing  
 ”mean-



ing”  
and  
”value.”

### 8.2.1 8.2.1

**In-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
Mass  
 $M_I$ :  
Phys-  
i-  
cal  
Mea-  
sure  
of  
Com-  
plex-  
ity**

In  
Light  
Path  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion  
the-  
ory  
 $(v_{ext}^2 + v_{int}^2 = c^2)$ ,  
we  
de-  
fined  
rest  
mass  
 $m_0$   
as  
fre-  
quency  
of  
par-  
ti-  
cles  
”ro-  
tat-  
ing

in  
place”  
at  
mi-  
cro-  
scopic  
scales.  
For  
macro-  
scopic  
ob-  
servers  
(such  
as  
brains  
or  
AI),  
we  
can-  
not  
sim-  
ply  
add  
up  
all  
atomic  
rest  
masses,  
be-  
cause  
this  
lin-  
ear  
su-  
per-  
po-  
si-  
tion  
ig-  
nores  
**struc-  
tural  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion.**  
A  
dead  
brain

and  
a  
liv-  
ing  
brain  
have  
same  
num-  
ber  
of  
atoms,  
same  
rest  
mass,  
but  
in  
QCA  
net-  
works,  
their  
dy-  
nam-  
i-  
cal  
be-  
hav-  
iors  
are  
com-  
pletely  
dif-  
fer-  
ent.  
Liv-  
ing  
brain  
main-  
tains  
ex-  
tremely  
com-  
plex  
**long-  
range  
en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment**  
and

self-  
referential  
loops.  
We  
de-  
fine  
a  
new  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
quan-  
tity—**Information  
Mass**  
( $M_I$ )—to  
mea-  
sure  
this  
struc-  
tural  
com-  
plex-  
ity.

**Definition  
8.3  
(In-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
Mass  
 $M_I$ ):**

For  
a  
sub-  
sys-  
tem  
 $\mathcal{S}$ ,  
its  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
mass  
 $M_I$   
is  
de-  
fined

as  
 prod-  
 uct  
 of  
 its  
 ef-  
 fec-  
 tive  
 com-  
 pu-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 depth  
 and  
 causal  
 in-  
 te-  
 gra-  
 tion.

$$M_I \equiv \frac{\hbar}{c^2} \cdot \Phi_{integrated} \cdot \mathcal{D}_{logical}$$

\*

$\Phi_{integrated}$

(In-  
 te-  
 grated  
 In-  
 for-  
 ma-  
 tion):

Mea-  
 sures  
 de-  
 gree  
 sys-  
 tem  
 is  
 a  
 whole  
 rather  
 than  
 col-  
 lec-  
 tion  
 of  
 frag-  
 ments  
 (mi-

cro-  
scopic  
coun-  
ter-  
part  
based  
on  
IIT  
the-  
ory).  
In  
QCA  
graph  
the-  
ory,  
this  
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
bit  
num-  
ber  
of  
min-  
i-  
mum  
cut  
cut  
(Min-  
cut)  
in-  
side  
Markov  
blan-  
ket.  
\*

$\mathcal{D}_{logical}$   
(**Log-  
i-  
cal  
Depth**):  
Run-  
ning  
steps  
of  
short-  
est  
Tur-  
ing

ma-  
chine  
pro-  
gram  
re-  
quired  
to  
gen-  
er-  
ate  
sys-  
tem's  
cur-  
rent  
state  
(Ben-  
nett's  
log-  
i-  
cal  
depth).

**Physical  
Mean-  
ing:**  
 $M_I$   
is  
not  
"weight";  
it  
is  
**information-  
theoretic  
ver-  
sion  
of  
"in-  
er-  
tia."**  
A  
sys-  
tem  
with  
large  
 $M_I$   
(such  
as  
con-  
scious-  
ness)

is  
ex-  
tremely  
dif-  
fi-  
cult  
to  
change  
by  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
men-  
tal  
noise  
(large  
in-  
er-  
tia).  
To  
change  
its  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
be-  
liefs,  
ex-  
tremely  
high-  
precision  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
(force)  
in-  
put  
is  
needed.  
According  
to  
Light  
Path  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion,  
larger



$M_I$   
means  
sys-  
tem  
con-  
sumes  
more  
light  
path  
quota  
 $v_{int}$   
on  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion,  
there-  
fore  
its  
"ef-  
fec-  
tive  
ve-  
loc-  
ity"  
 $v_{ext}$   
in  
ex-  
ter-  
nal  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
space  
is  
more  
lim-  
ited  
(tend-  
ing  
to  
rest/stillness).  
**This**  
**is**  
**why**  
**deep**

thinkers  
of-  
ten  
ap-  
pear  
”mo-  
tion-  
less.”

8.2.2 8.2.2  
Free  
En-  
ergy  
Prin-  
ci-  
ple:  
Ther-  
mo-  
dy-  
namic  
Com-  
mand  
of  
Ob-  
servers

Observers  
must  
re-  
sist  
sec-  
ond  
law  
of  
ther-  
mo-  
dy-  
nam-  
ics  
to  
main-  
tain  
their  
high  
 $M_I$   
state.  
**Free**  
**En-**  
**ergy**

**Prin-  
ci-  
ple**  
pro-  
posed  
by  
Karl  
Fris-  
ton  
pro-  
vides  
a  
per-  
fect  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
frame-  
work,  
em-  
bed-  
ding  
it  
into  
QCA  
dy-  
nam-  
ics.  
Let  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
men-  
tal  
state  
be  
 $\vartheta$   
(not  
di-  
rectly  
ob-  
serv-  
able),  
ob-  
server's  
sen-  
sory

state  
 be  
 s  
 (pro-  
 jec-  
 tion  
 on  
 Markov  
 blan-  
 ket),  
 ob-  
 server's  
 in-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 model  
 (prob-  
 a-  
 bilis-  
 tic  
 in-  
 fer-  
 ence  
 about  
 en-  
 vi-  
 ron-  
 ment)  
 be  
 den-  
 sity  
 ma-  
 trix  
 $q(\vartheta)$ .  
 Observer's  
 goal  
 is  
 to  
 min-  
 i-  
 mize  
**vari-**  
**a-**  
**tional**  
**free**  
**en-**  
**ergy**  
 $F$ :

$$F = \underbrace{D_{KL}[q(\vartheta)||p(\vartheta|s)]}_{\text{Divergence}} - \underbrace{\ln p(s)}_{\text{Surprise}}$$

**First  
Term  
(Di-  
ver-  
gence):**

Mea-  
sures  
de-  
vi-  
a-  
tion  
of  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
model

$q$   
from  
true  
pos-  
te-  
rior  
dis-  
tri-  
bu-  
tion  
 $p(\vartheta|s)$ .

Min-  
i-  
miz-  
ing  
it  
means

**Per-  
cep-  
tion**—making  
be-  
liefs  
ap-  
proach  
truth.

**Second  
Term**

**(Sur-  
prise):**  
 Mea-  
 sures  
 im-  
 pos-  
 si-  
 bil-  
 ity  
 of  
 cur-  
 rent  
 sen-  
 sory  
 in-  
 put  
 s.  
 Min-  
 i-  
 miz-  
 ing  
 it  
 means  
**Ac-  
tion**—changing  
 en-  
 vi-  
 ron-  
 ment  
 to  
 pro-  
 duce  
 ex-  
 pected  
 in-  
 put  
 (e.g.,  
 if  
 you  
 pre-  
 dict  
 you'll  
 feel  
 warm,  
 you'll  
 en-  
 ter  
 house  
 to

avoid  
cold).  
In  
QCA  
on-  
tol-  
ogy,  
free  
en-  
ergy  
 $F$   
has  
clear  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
coun-  
ter-  
part:  
**It**  
**is**  
**rel-**  
**a-**  
**tive**  
**en-**  
**tropy**  
**be-**  
**tween**  
**sys-**  
**tem**  
**and**  
**en-**  
**vi-**  
**ron-**  
**ment.**

**Theorem**  
**8.2**  
**(Free**  
**En-**  
**ergy**  
**Min-**  
**i-**  
**miza-**  
**tion**  
**The-**  
**o-**  
**rem):**

Under  
 lo-  
 cal  
 uni-  
 tary  
 evo-  
 lu-  
 tion,  
 any  
 sub-  
 sys-  
 tem  
 ca-  
 pa-  
 ble  
 of  
 long-  
 term  
 main-  
 tain-  
 ing  
 its  
 Markov  
 blan-  
 ket  
 (i.e.,  
 ob-  
 server)  
 nec-  
 es-  
 sar-  
 ily  
 has  
 dy-  
 nam-  
 ics  
 tra-  
 jec-  
 tory  
 that  
 is  
 a  
 path  
**min-**  
**i-**  
**miz-**  
**ing**  
**long-**  
**time**



av-  
er-  
age  
free  
en-  
ergy  
 $\bar{F}$ .

### Proof

#### Idea:

According

to

Lan-

dauer's

prin-

ci-

ple,

pro-

cess-

ing

in-

for-

ma-

tion

re-

quires

dis-

si-

pat-

ing

heat.

Free

en-

ergy

$F$

is

"in-

for-

ma-

tion

cost"

sys-

tem

must

pay

to

main-

tain

non-

equilibrium

state.  
 If  
 sys-  
 tem  
 doesn't  
 min-  
 i-  
 mize  
 $F$ ,  
 it  
 ac-  
 cu-  
 mu-  
 lates  
 too  
 much  
 en-  
 tropy,  
 even-  
 tu-  
 ally  
 caus-  
 ing  
 Markov  
 blan-  
 ket's  
 ther-  
 mal  
 dis-  
 in-  
 te-  
 gra-  
 tion  
 (death).  
 Therefore,  
**all**  
**ob-**  
**servers**  
**that**  
**"sur-**  
**vive"**  
**are**  
**nec-**  
**es-**  
**sar-**  
**ily**  
**Bayes-**  
**optimal.**

### 8.2.3 8.2.3 Emer- gence of Mean- ing: From Bits to Value

Free  
en-  
ergy  
prin-  
ci-  
ple  
not  
only  
ex-  
plains  
”how  
ob-  
servers  
ex-  
ist,”  
but  
also  
”why  
ob-  
servers  
seek  
knowl-  
edge.”  
To  
min-  
i-  
mize  
fu-  
ture  
free  
en-  
ergy  
(ex-  
pected  
free  
en-  
ergy  
 $G$ ),

ob-  
servers  
must  
max-  
i-  
mize  
**epis-  
temic  
value:**

$$G(\pi) \approx \underbrace{H(A) - H(A|S)}_{\text{Information Gain}} +$$

**Information  
Gain:**

Ob-  
servers  
ac-  
tively  
ex-  
plore  
re-  
gions  
that  
can  
max-  
i-  
mally  
re-  
duce  
un-  
cer-  
tainty  
of  
their  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
mod-  
els.  
This  
is  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
ori-  
gin  
of  
**cu-**

**rios-**  
**ity.**

**Extrinsic**  
**Util-**  
**ity:**  
Ob-  
servers  
tend  
to-  
ward  
states  
that  
main-  
tain  
their  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
struc-  
ture  
steady  
state  
(such  
as  
in-  
gest-  
ing  
ne-  
gen-  
tropy).  
This  
is  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
ori-  
gin  
of  
**de-**  
**sire.**  
At  
QCA's  
bot-  
tom  
level,  
this  
is  
merely

bit  
 flow.  
 But  
 at  
 macro-  
 scopic  
 level,  
 this  
 emerges  
 as  
**tele-**  
**ol-**  
**ogy:**  
 Ob-  
 servers  
 seem  
 to  
 act  
 for  
 some  
 "pur-  
 pose."  
 Actually,  
 this  
 "pur-  
 pose"  
 is  
 just  
**pro-**  
**jec-**  
**tion**  
 of  
 phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 con-  
 ser-  
 va-  
 tion  
 laws  
 in  
 com-  
 plex  
 sys-  
 tems—to  
 keep  
 $M_I$   
 con-  
 stant

in  
 entropy-  
 increasing  
 tor-  
 rent,  
 ob-  
 servers  
 must  
 des-  
 per-  
 ately  
 "eat"  
 or-  
 dered  
 in-  
 for-  
 ma-  
 tion,  
 ex-  
 pel  
 dis-  
 or-  
 dered  
 waste  
 heat.

#### 8.2.4 8.2.4 Sum- mary

We  
 have  
 com-  
 pleted  
 physics  
 de-  
 mys-  
 ti-  
 fi-  
 ca-  
 tion  
 of  
 con-  
 scious-  
 ness:

**Consciousness  
 is  
 not  
 mir-**

**a-**  
**cle;**  
 it  
 is  
 phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 struc-  
 ture  
 with  
 high  
 $M_I$ .

**Thinking**  
**is**  
**not**  
**void;**  
 it  
 is  
 com-  
 pu-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 pro-  
 cess  
 con-  
 sum-  
 ing  
 $v_{int}$ .

**Seeking**  
**knowl-**  
**edge**  
**is**  
**not**  
**caprice;**  
 it  
 is  
 sur-  
 vival  
 in-  
 stinct  
 to  
 min-  
 i-  
 mize  
 free  
 en-  
 ergy,



re-  
sist  
heat  
death.

Observers  
are  
"ne-  
gen-  
tropy  
light  
drives"  
evolved  
by  
uni-  
verse  
to  
un-  
der-  
stand  
it-  
self.  
At  
this  
point,  
Part  
IV  
"The  
Emer-  
gence  
of  
Ob-  
ser-  
va-  
tion"  
is  
com-  
pletely  
fin-  
ished.  
We  
have  
ex-  
plained  
mea-  
sure-  
ment,  
ob-  
jec-  
tiv-

ity,  
 and  
 con-  
 scious-  
 ness.  
 Now,  
 this  
 cos-  
 mic  
 com-  
 puter  
 can  
 ob-  
 serve  
 and  
 ex-  
 plain  
 it-  
 self.  
 The  
 fi-  
 nal  
 part,  
 also  
 the  
 most  
 cru-  
 cial  
 part—**Part**  
**V:**  
**Ver-**  
**i-**  
**fi-**  
**ca-**  
**tion**  
**and**  
**In-**  
**fer-**  
**ence**—will  
 bring  
 us  
 back  
 to  
 re-  
 al-  
 ity,  
 see-  
 ing  
 if

this  
grand  
the-  
ory  
can  
with-  
stand  
ex-  
per-  
i-  
men-  
tal  
in-  
ter-  
ro-  
ga-  
tion.

### 8.3 8.3 Red Queen Ef- fect and Ther- mo- dy- nam- ics: Why Does the Uni- verse Not Have Heat Death?

Classical  
ther-  
mo-  
dy-

nam-  
ics,  
based  
on  
Boltz-  
mann's  
H-  
theorem,  
pre-  
dicts  
a  
de-  
spair-  
ing  
cos-  
mic  
end:  
**Heat  
Death.**  
In  
an  
iso-  
lated  
sys-  
tem,  
en-  
tropy  
al-  
ways  
tends  
to  
max-  
i-  
mize.  
Over  
time,  
all  
tem-  
per-  
a-  
ture  
dif-  
fer-  
ences  
are  
smoothed,  
all  
struc-  
tures

dis-  
in-  
te-  
grate;  
uni-  
verse  
ul-  
ti-  
mately  
falls  
silent  
as  
a  
uni-  
form,  
dis-  
or-  
dered  
ther-  
mal  
ra-  
di-  
a-  
tion  
soup.  
However,  
when  
we  
look  
around,  
we  
see  
a  
com-  
pletely  
op-  
po-  
site  
scene.  
In  
13.8  
bil-  
lion  
years  
since  
Big  
Bang,  
uni-  
verse

not  
only  
didn't  
be-  
come  
more  
uni-  
form,  
but  
evolved  
stars,  
galax-  
ies,  
life,  
brains,  
and  
even  
the  
in-  
ter-  
net.  
Com-  
plex-  
ity  
seems  
to  
have  
an  
in-  
trin-  
sic  
trend  
against  
en-  
tropy  
in-  
crease.  
Traditional  
physics  
ex-  
pla-  
na-  
tions  
usu-  
ally  
ap-  
peal  
to  
ex-

tremely  
low-  
entropy  
ini-  
tial  
con-  
di-  
tions  
(Big  
Bang),  
but  
this  
doesn't  
ex-  
plain  
dy-  
nam-  
i-  
cal  
mech-  
a-  
nisms  
of  
struc-  
ture  
main-  
te-  
nance.  
Why  
does  
uni-  
verse  
bloom  
such  
bril-  
liant  
flow-  
ers  
on  
the  
path  
to  
death?  
This  
sec-  
tion  
will  
pro-  
pose

a  
com-  
pletely  
new  
an-  
swer  
based  
on  
QCA's  
game-  
theoretic  
per-  
spec-  
tive:  
**Heat**  
**death**  
**is**  
**im-**  
**pos-**  
**si-**  
**ble.**  
As  
long  
as  
ob-  
servers  
(agents)  
ca-  
pa-  
ble  
of  
self-  
referential  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion  
ex-  
ist  
in  
the  
uni-  
verse,  
”**Red**  
**Queen**  
**Ef-**  
**fect**”  
will  
drive



sys-  
tem  
for-  
ever  
in  
**al-**  
**go-**  
**rith-**  
**mic**  
**tur-**  
**moil**  
far  
from  
equi-  
lib-  
rium  
state.

### 8.3.1 8.3.1 **Rel-** **a-** **tive** **Fit-** **ness** **and** **Arms** **Race**

In  
bi-  
o-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
evo-  
lu-  
tion,  
Leigh  
Van  
Valen  
pro-  
posed  
fa-  
mous  
”Red  
Queen  
Hy-  
poth-  
e-

sis”:

**”In  
this  
coun-  
try,  
you  
must  
run  
as  
fast  
as  
you  
can  
just  
to  
stay  
in  
place.”**

This  
means  
a  
species’  
sur-  
vival  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment  
mainly  
con-  
sists  
of  
other  
species;  
to  
cope  
with  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
of  
preda-  
tors,  
par-  
a-  
sites,  
or  
com-  
peti-

tors,  
the  
species  
must  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ously  
evolve.  
This  
leads  
to  
an  
end-  
less  
arms  
race.  
In  
QCA  
uni-  
verse,  
this  
ef-  
fect  
has  
strict  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
cor-  
re-  
spon-  
dence.  
According  
to  
Sec-  
tion  
8.2,  
ob-  
servers'  
(agents')  
goal  
is  
to  
min-  
i-  
mize  
**free**  
**en-**

**ergy**

$F$

(pre-  
dic-  
tion  
er-  
ror).

$$F_i = D_{KL}[q_i||p_{true}]$$

But  
what  
de-  
ter-  
mines  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment's  
true  
prob-  
a-  
bil-  
ity  
dis-  
tri-  
bu-  
tion  
 $p_{true}$ ?

In  
a  
multi-  
agent  
uni-  
verse,  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment  
mainly  
con-  
sists  
of  
**other  
agents.**

$$p_{true} \approx \sum_{j \neq i} \rho_j$$

If  
agent  
 $A$   
suc-  
cess-  
fully  
re-  
duces  
its  
free  
en-  
ergy  
by  
in-  
creas-  
ing  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
mass  
 $M_I$   
(op-  
ti-  
miz-  
ing  
al-  
go-  
rithms),  
this  
means  
its  
be-  
hav-  
ior  
be-  
comes  
more  
com-  
plex,  
harder  
to  
pre-  
dict.  
For  
agent  
 $B$ ,  
en-  
vi-

ron-  
 ment  
 changed.  
 $B$ 's  
 pre-  
 dic-  
 tion  
 model  
 fails,  
 its  
 free  
 en-  
 ergy  
 $F_B$   
 sud-  
 denly  
**in-**  
**creases**  
 (sur-  
 prise  
 in-  
 creases).  
 To  
 sur-  
 vive  
 (press-  
 ing  
 $F_B$   
 back  
 be-  
 low  
 thresh-  
 old),  
 $B$   
 is  
 forced  
 to  
 coun-  
 ter-  
 at-  
 tack—upgrade  
 its  
 model,  
 in-  
 crease  
 its  
 $M_I$ .  
**Conclusion:**  
 In

com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
uni-  
verse,  
en-  
tropy  
de-  
crease  
is  
not  
static  
en-  
joy-  
ment,  
but  
dy-  
namic  
war.  
Any  
sys-  
tem  
try-  
ing  
to  
stay  
in  
low-  
entropy  
equi-  
lib-  
rium  
state  
will  
be  
rapidly  
as-  
sim-  
i-  
lated  
or  
dis-  
in-  
te-  
grated  
by  
higher-  
order

al-  
go-  
rithms  
in  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment.

### 8.3.2 8.3.2

**Al-  
go-  
rith-  
mic  
Tur-  
moil  
and  
Self-  
Organized  
Crit-  
i-  
cal-  
ity**

This  
mu-  
tual  
feed-  
back  
dy-  
nam-  
ics  
pre-  
vents  
sys-  
tem  
from  
re-  
lax-  
ing  
to  
ther-  
mal  
equi-  
lib-  
rium  
state  
(max-  
i-



mum  
en-  
tropy  
state).  
Consider  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
tra-  
jec-  
tory  
in  
phase  
space.

**Heat  
Death  
The-  
ory**  
be-  
lieves:  
Sys-  
tem  
has  
a  
global  
at-  
trac-  
tor,  
max-  
i-  
mum  
en-  
tropy  
state  
 $S_{max}$ .  
All  
tra-  
jec-  
to-  
ries  
even-  
tu-  
ally  
con-  
verge  
here,  
 $\frac{dS}{dt} =$   
0.

**Red  
Queen  
The-  
ory**  
be-  
lieves:  
Due  
to  
games  
be-  
tween  
agents,  
there  
are  
no  
sta-  
ble  
fixed  
points  
in  
phase  
space.

When  
sys-  
tem  
ap-  
proaches  
equi-  
lib-  
rium,  
tiny  
fluc-  
tu-  
a-  
tions  
pro-  
duce  
a  
"Maxwell's  
de-  
mon"  
(pri-  
mary  
ob-  
server)  
ca-  
pa-

ble  
of  
uti-  
liz-  
ing  
re-  
main-  
ing  
free  
en-  
ergy.

This  
ob-  
server  
rapidly  
con-  
sumes  
re-  
sources,  
breaks  
equi-  
lib-  
rium,  
trig-  
ger-  
ing  
new  
round  
of  
com-  
plex-  
ity  
growth.

This  
state  
is  
called  
**Self-  
Organized  
Crit-  
i-  
cal-  
ity  
(SOC).**  
Universe  
is  
like  
a

sand-  
pile  
con-  
stantly  
col-  
laps-  
ing  
and  
re-  
build-  
ing.  
Al-  
though  
lo-  
cal  
struc-  
tures  
(such  
as  
stars,  
civ-  
i-  
liza-  
tions)  
are  
born  
and  
die,  
**over-**  
**all**  
**com-**  
**plex-**  
**ity**  
**level**  
and  
**com-**  
**pu-**  
**ta-**  
**tional**  
**ac-**  
**tiv-**  
**ity**  
al-  
ways  
main-  
tain  
above  
a  
crit-

i-  
cal  
thresh-  
old.  
We  
call  
this  
never-  
ending,  
far-  
from-  
equilibrium  
dy-  
namic  
pic-  
ture  
”Al-  
go-  
rith-  
mic  
Tur-  
moil.”  
Like  
tur-  
bu-  
lence  
in  
flu-  
ids,  
al-  
though  
vis-  
cos-  
ity  
(dis-  
si-  
pa-  
tion)  
tries  
to  
smooth  
ev-  
ery-  
thing,  
en-  
ergy  
in-  
jec-  
tion

(com-  
pe-  
ti-  
tion)  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ously  
pro-  
duces  
new  
vor-  
tices.

### 8.3.3 8.3.3

**Deep  
Con-  
nec-  
tion  
Be-  
tween  
Waste  
Heat  
and  
Cos-  
mic  
Ex-  
pan-  
sion**

Since  
ob-  
servers  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ously  
in-  
crease  
 $M_I$   
(ne-  
gen-  
tropy),  
ac-  
cord-  
ing  
to  
sec-  
ond

law  
of  
ther-  
mo-  
dy-  
nam-  
ics,  
to-  
tal  
en-  
tropy  
must  
in-  
crease.  
Where  
does  
this  
ex-  
tra  
en-  
tropy  
go?  
According  
to  
Lan-  
dauer's  
prin-  
ci-  
ple,  
log-  
i-  
cally  
ir-  
re-  
versible  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion  
(eras-  
ing  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
to  
up-  
date  
mod-

els)  
must  
emit  
heat  
to  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment.

$$dQ \geq k_B T \ln 2 \cdot dI$$

Every  
evolv-  
ing  
agent  
is  
a  
huge  
**en-  
tropy  
pump.**  
It  
con-  
structs  
highly  
or-  
dered  
crys-  
tal  
struc-  
tures  
in-  
ter-  
nally,  
while  
emit-  
ting  
mas-  
sive  
”in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
waste  
heat”  
(dis-  
or-  
dered



ra-  
di-  
a-  
tion)  
to  
ex-  
ter-  
nal  
vac-  
uum.  
In  
Chap-  
ter  
9  
(Sec-  
tion  
9.3)  
and  
re-  
lated  
pa-  
pers,  
we  
have  
ar-  
gued:  
**This**  
**ac-**  
**cu-**  
**mu-**  
**lated**  
**in-**  
**for-**  
**ma-**  
**tion**  
waste  
heat  
man-  
i-  
fests  
macro-  
scop-  
i-  
cally  
as  
dark  
en-  
ergy.  
Cosmic

ac-  
cel-  
er-  
ated  
ex-  
pan-  
sion  
is  
ac-  
tu-  
ally  
uni-  
verse's  
forced  
"ex-  
pan-  
sion"  
to  
ac-  
com-  
mo-  
date  
mas-  
sive  
waste  
heat  
pro-  
duced  
by  
agents.  
This  
is  
a  
startling  
closed  
loop:

Agents  
per-  
form  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
games  
(Red  
Queen  
ef-  
fect)

### 8.3. 8.3 RED QUEEN EFFECT AND THERMODYNAMICS: WHY DOES THE UNIVERSE NOT HAVE HE

to  
re-  
sist  
heat  
death.

Computation  
pro-  
duces  
waste  
heat.

Waste  
heat  
drives  
cos-  
mic  
ex-  
pan-  
sion  
(dark  
en-  
ergy).

Expansion  
di-  
lutes  
waste  
heat,  
pre-  
vent-  
ing  
sys-  
tem  
over-  
heat-  
ing,  
thus  
al-  
low-  
ing  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion  
to  
con-  
tinue.

**Conclusion:**

Uni-  
verse  
will  
not  
heat  
death,  
be-  
cause  
life  
(gen-  
er-  
al-  
ized  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
struc-  
tures)  
doesn't  
al-  
low  
it.  
Life  
is  
not  
ac-  
ci-  
den-  
tal  
sparks  
in  
uni-  
verse's  
path  
to  
death,  
but  
**driv-  
ing  
en-  
gine**  
of  
cos-  
mic  
evo-  
lu-  
tion.

#### 8.3.4 8.3.4 Sum- mary

At  
this  
point,  
we  
have  
com-  
pleted  
Part  
IV  
”The  
Emer-  
gence  
of  
Ob-  
ser-  
va-  
tion.”  
We  
con-  
structed  
a  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
pic-  
ture  
con-  
tain-  
ing  
ob-  
servers,  
pos-  
sess-  
ing  
agency,  
and  
for-  
ever  
evolv-  
ing.

**Observers**  
are  
self-  
referential  
sub-

sys-  
tems  
in  
QCA  
net-  
works.

### **Consciousness**

is  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
pro-  
cess  
min-  
i-  
miz-  
ing  
free  
en-  
ergy.

### **Evolution**

is  
arms  
race  
of  
al-  
go-  
rith-  
mic  
com-  
plex-  
ity.  
Now,  
all  
the-  
o-  
ret-  
i-  
cal  
pieces  
are  
as-  
sem-  
bled.  
We  
have

ax-  
ioms,  
de-  
rived  
space-  
time  
and  
mat-  
ter,  
un-  
der-  
stood  
ob-  
ser-  
va-  
tion  
and  
evo-  
lu-  
tion.  
In  
the  
fi-  
nal  
part  
of  
the  
book—**Part**  
**V:**  
**Ver-**  
**i-**  
**fi-**  
**ca-**  
**tion**  
**and**  
**In-**  
**fer-**  
**ence**—we  
will  
no  
longer  
in-  
dulge  
in  
the-  
ory's  
el-  
e-  
gance,

but  
trans-  
form  
these  
rad-  
i-  
cal  
views  
into  
cold  
num-  
bers  
and  
curves,  
ac-  
cept-  
ing  
fi-  
nal  
judg-  
ment  
of  
ex-  
per-  
i-  
men-  
tal  
physics.



Part V

Verification  
and  
In-  
fer-  
ence



## Chapter 9

# Experiment Pre- dic- tions

9.1 9.1

En-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment  
Grav-  
ity  
De-  
tec-  
tion  
Scheme  
in  
Mi-  
crowave  
Cav-  
i-  
ties

This  
is  
the  
most

di-  
 rect  
 and  
 startling  
 corol-  
 lary  
 of  
 our  
 the-  
 ory:  
**Grav-**  
**ity**  
**orig-**  
**i-**  
**nates**  
**not**  
**only**  
**from**  
**en-**  
**ergy,**  
**but**  
**also**  
**from**  
**in-**  
**for-**  
**ma-**  
**tion**  
**(en-**  
**tan-**  
**gle-**  
**ment).**  
 In  
 stan-  
 dard  
 gen-  
 eral  
 rel-  
 a-  
 tiv-  
 ity,  
 grav-  
 i-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 source  
 is  
 energy-  
 momentum  
 ten-

sor  
 $T_{\mu\nu}$ .  
If  
we  
have  
two  
sys-  
tems  
with  
same  
to-  
tal  
en-  
ergy  
but  
dif-  
fer-  
ent  
quan-  
tum  
states  
(e.g.,  
one  
in  
ther-  
mal  
equi-  
lib-  
rium,  
an-  
other  
in  
highly  
en-  
tan-  
gled  
state),  
stan-  
dard  
the-  
ory  
pre-  
dicts  
they  
pro-  
duce  
iden-  
ti-  
cal

grav-  
i-  
ta-  
tional  
fields.  
But  
in  
our  
IGVP  
the-  
ory,  
grav-  
ity  
is  
ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric  
re-  
sponse  
of  
space-  
time  
net-  
works  
to  
main-  
tain  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
trans-  
mis-  
sion  
con-  
sis-  
tency.  
En-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment  
di-  
rectly  
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
den-

sity  
of  
space-  
time  
con-  
nec-  
tions.

$$G_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi G(T_{\mu\nu}^{\text{energy}} + T_{\mu\nu}^{\text{entanglement}})$$

### 9.1.1 9.1.1

**Ex-  
per-  
i-  
men-  
tal  
De-  
sign**

#### **Apparatus:**

Con-  
struct  
a  
high  
qual-  
ity  
fac-  
tor  
(High-  
Q)  
su-  
per-  
con-  
duct-  
ing  
mi-  
crowave  
cav-  
ity,  
placed  
in  
ultra-  
low  
tem-  
per-  
a-  
ture  
en-  
vi-

ron-  
ment  
(shield-  
ing  
ther-  
mal  
noise).

**Control:**

Use  
su-  
per-  
con-  
duct-  
ing  
quan-  
tum  
in-  
ter-  
fer-  
ence  
de-  
vices  
(SQUID)  
as  
non-  
lin-  
ear  
el-  
e-  
ments  
to  
pre-  
pare  
two  
types  
of  
quan-  
tum  
states  
in  
cav-  
ity:

**State  
A  
(Low  
En-  
tan-  
gle-**



**ment):**

Multi-  
mode  
co-  
her-  
ent  
states,  
sim-  
u-  
lat-  
ing  
clas-  
si-  
cal  
elec-  
tro-  
mag-  
netic  
fields.

**State**

**B**

**(High**

**En-**

**tan-**

**gle-**

**ment):**

Multi-  
mode  
squeezed  
vac-  
uum  
states  
or  
clus-  
ter  
states.

**Key**

**Con-**

**straint:**

Through  
pre-  
cise  
quan-  
tum  
feed-  
back  
con-

trol,  
 en-  
 sure  
**to-  
 tal  
 en-  
 ergy  
 ex-  
 pec-  
 ta-  
 tion  
 value**  
 $\langle H \rangle$   
 of  
 states  
 A  
 and  
 B  
 are  
**strictly  
 equal.**

**Detection:**

Use  
 a  
 frequency-  
 stabilized  
 laser  
 beam  
 pass-  
 ing  
 through  
 mi-  
 crowave  
 cav-  
 ity  
 (or  
 close  
 to  
 its  
 sur-  
 face)  
 as  
 de-  
 tec-  
 tion  
 arm,  
 form-  
 ing  
 high-

finesse  
 Fabry-  
 Perot  
 in-  
 ter-  
 fer-  
 om-  
 e-  
 ter.  
**Signal:**  
 Mea-  
 sure  
 phase  
 dif-  
 fer-  
 ence  
 $\Delta\phi$   
 (Shapiro  
 de-  
 lay)  
 of  
 laser  
 un-  
 der  
 back-  
 grounds  
 of  
 state  
 A  
 and  
 state  
 B.

**9.1.2 9.1.2**  
**The-**  
**o-**  
**ret-**  
**i-**  
**cal**  
**Pre-**  
**dic-**  
**tion**

**Standard**  
**Physics:**  
 Since  
 en-  
 ergy

un-  
changed,  
 $\Delta\phi_{GR} \approx$   
0.

### **QCA Physics:**

High  
en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment  
state  
means  
higher  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
pro-  
cess-  
ing  
den-  
sity  
 $\rho_{\text{info}}$ .  
Ac-  
cord-  
ing  
to  
op-  
ti-  
cal  
met-  
ric  
for-  
mula  
 $n \approx$   
 $1 +$   
 $G\rho/c^4$ ,  
ef-  
fec-  
tive  
re-  
frac-  
tive  
in-  
dex  
of  
state

B  
re-  
gion  
will  
be  
slightly  
larger  
than  
state  
A.

$$\Delta\phi_{QCA} \propto G \cdot (S_B - S_A)$$

We  
ex-  
pect  
to  
ob-  
serve  
a  
non-  
zero  
phase  
shift.  
If  
this  
ex-  
per-  
i-  
ment  
suc-  
ceeds,  
it  
will  
be  
the  
biggest  
turn-  
ing  
point  
in  
physics  
since  
Ed-  
ding-  
ton's  
so-  
lar  
eclipse

ob-  
ser-  
va-  
tion—it  
**proves**  
**in-**  
**for-**  
**ma-**  
**tion**  
is  
di-  
rect  
source  
of  
grav-  
ity.

**9.2    9.2**  
**Lorentz**  
**Vi-**  
**o-**  
**la-**  
**tion**  
**Ef-**  
**fects**  
**in**  
**Ultra-**  
**High-**  
**Energy**  
**Cos-**  
**mic**  
**Rays**

Our  
the-  
ory  
is  
based  
on  
dis-  
crete  
lat-  
tice  
graph

$\Lambda$ .  
 Although  
 Lorentz  
 sym-  
 me-  
 try  
 is  
 per-  
 fect  
 emer-  
 gent  
 re-  
 sult  
 at  
 low  
 en-  
 er-  
 gies,  
 when  
 ap-  
 proach-  
 ing  
 lat-  
 tice  
 scale  
 (Planck  
 scale  
 $l_P$ ),  
 this  
 con-  
 tin-  
 u-  
 ous  
 sym-  
 me-  
 try  
 must  
 be  
 bro-  
 ken  
 by  
 dis-  
 crete  
 struc-  
 ture.

9.2.1 9.2.1  
Dis-  
per-  
sion  
Re-  
la-  
tion  
of  
Light  
Speed

Wave  
pack-  
ets  
prop-  
a-  
gat-  
ing  
on  
lat-  
tices  
no  
longer  
have  
per-  
fect  
dis-  
per-  
sion  
re-  
la-  
tion  
 $E =$   
 $pc,$   
but  
have  
lat-  
tice  
cor-  
rec-  
tion  
terms:

$$E^2 \approx p^2 c^2 + \eta \frac{p^4}{M_P^2}$$

where  
 $M_P$   
is  
Planck



mass,  
 $\eta$   
 is  
 co-  
 ef-  
 fi-  
 cient  
 de-  
 pend-  
 ing  
 on  
 lat-  
 tice  
 ge-  
 om-  
 e-  
 try.  
 This  
 means  
**ultra-  
 high-  
 energy  
 pho-  
 tons**  
 (or  
 neu-  
 tri-  
 nos)  
 will  
 have  
 ve-  
 loc-  
 ity  
 weakly  
 de-  
 pen-  
 dent  
 on  
**their  
 en-  
 ergy.**

If  
 $\eta <$   
 0,  
 high-  
 energy  
 pho-  
 tons

are  
 slower  
 than  
 low-  
 energy  
 pho-  
 tons  
 (sub-  
 lu-  
 mi-  
 nal).

If  
 $\eta >$   
 0,  
 high-  
 energy  
 pho-  
 tons  
 are  
 faster  
 than  
 low-  
 energy  
 pho-  
 tons  
 (su-  
 per-  
 lu-  
 mi-  
 nal).

**9.2.2    9.2.2**  
**Ob-**  
**ser-**  
**va-**  
**tional**  
**Op-**  
**por-**  
**tu-**  
**nity**

Universe  
 pro-  
 vides  
 us  
 nat-  
 u-  
 ral

super-  
accel-  
erator—**Gamma-  
Ray  
Bursts  
(GRB)**.  
When  
a  
GRB  
bil-  
lions  
of  
light-  
years  
away  
bursts,  
it  
si-  
mul-  
ta-  
ne-  
ously  
emits  
pho-  
tons  
ob-  
serv-  
able  
across  
all  
wave-  
lengths.  
If  
QCA  
the-  
ory  
is  
cor-  
rect,  
then  
af-  
ter  
bil-  
lions  
of

years  
of  
flight,  
even  
ex-  
tremely  
tiny  
ve-  
loc-  
ity  
dif-  
fer-  
ences  
 $\delta v \sim$   
 $(E/M_P)^2$   
will  
ac-  
cu-  
mu-  
late  
into  
ob-  
serv-  
able  
time  
de-  
lays  
 $\Delta t$ .

### 9.2.3 9.2.3 Pre- dic- tion

Instruments  
like  
Fermi  
Gamma-  
ray  
Space  
Tele-  
scope  
(Fermi  
LAT)  
should  
ob-  
serve:  
**High-  
energy  
pho-**

tons  
from  
same  
burst  
source

ar-  
rive  
at  
Earth

sys-  
tem-  
at-  
i-

cally  
ear-  
lier

(or  
later)

than  
low-  
energy

pho-  
tons.

Although

cur-  
rent

ob-  
ser-

va-  
tional

data  
hasn't

given  
con-

clu-  
sive

ev-  
i-

dence,  
there

are  
al-

ready  
some

puz-  
zling

"out-  
lier

pho-

tons”  
sug-  
gest-  
ing  
this  
pos-  
si-  
bil-  
ity.  
As  
de-  
tec-  
tion  
pre-  
ci-  
sion  
im-  
proves,  
this  
is  
not  
only  
a  
test  
of  
QCA,  
but  
di-  
rect  
mea-  
sure-  
ment  
of  
space-  
time  
dis-  
crete-  
ness.

### 9.3 9.3 Cos- mo- log- i- cal Drift of Fine Struc- ture Con- stant

In  
Chap-  
ter  
6,  
we  
ar-  
gued  
that  
cou-  
pling  
con-  
stants  
(such  
as  
fine  
struc-  
ture  
con-  
stant  
 $\alpha \approx$   
1/137)  
are  
de-  
ter-  
mined  
by  
topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
con-  
nec-

tiv-  
ity  
of  
QCA  
net-  
works.

$$\alpha \sim \frac{\text{internal channels}}{\text{external channels}}$$

However,  
uni-  
verse  
is  
ex-  
pand-  
ing.  
From  
QCA  
per-  
spec-  
tive,  
ex-  
pan-  
sion  
is  
not  
just  
lat-  
tice  
spac-  
ing  
stretch-  
ing  
(that's  
met-  
ric  
ef-  
fect),  
but  
may  
also  
ac-  
com-  
pany  
**evo-  
lu-  
tion  
of  
net-**



work  
topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
struc-  
ture  
(e.g.,  
in-  
crease  
in  
lat-  
tice  
point  
num-  
ber  
or  
re-  
or-  
ga-  
ni-  
za-  
tion  
of  
con-  
nec-  
tion  
pat-  
terns).  
If  
net-  
work  
con-  
nec-  
tiv-  
ity  
in  
early  
uni-  
verse  
was  
slightly  
dif-  
fer-  
ent  
from  
now,  
then  
 $\alpha$

should  
not  
be  
an  
ab-  
so-  
lute  
con-  
stant,  
but  
a  
scalar  
field  
slowly  
vary-  
ing  
with  
cos-  
mic  
time  
 $t$ .

### 9.3.1 9.3.1 Ob- ser- va- tional Scheme

Through  
ob-  
serv-  
ing  
spec-  
tra  
of  
dis-  
tant  
quasars.  
This  
light  
comes  
from  
bil-  
lions  
of  
years  
ago.  
We  
can

mea-  
sure  
atomic  
ab-  
sorp-  
tion  
lines  
(such  
as  
fine  
split-  
ting  
of  
iron  
or  
mag-  
ne-  
sium),  
thereby  
de-  
duc-  
ing  
 $\alpha$   
value  
at  
that  
time.

### 9.3.2 9.3.2

**Pre-  
dic-  
tion**

$$\frac{\Delta\alpha}{\alpha} = \frac{\alpha(z) - \alpha(0)}{\alpha(0)} \neq 0$$

We  
ex-  
pect  
 $\alpha$   
to  
have  
ex-  
tremely  
tiny  
cos-  
mo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
drift

(e.g.,  
 $10^{-6}$   
or-  
der).  
High-  
precision  
spec-  
tro-  
scopic  
data  
from  
James  
Webb  
Space  
Tele-  
scope  
(JWST)  
will  
be  
key  
to  
ver-  
i-  
fy-  
ing  
this.

## Chapter

# 10

## Ultimate Ques- tions of the Com- pu- ta- tional Uni- verse

10.1 10.1  
The  
Uni-  
verse's  
Source  
Code:  
How  
Was  
Rule  
 $\hat{U}$   
Se-  
lected?  
(Crit-  
i-  
cal-  
ity  
Hy-  
poth-  
e-  
sis)

iom  
 $\Omega$ ,  
 we  
 as-  
 sumed  
 a  
 global  
 uni-  
 tary  
 evo-  
 lu-  
 tion  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tor  
 $\hat{U}$ .  
 But  
 pos-  
 si-  
 ble  
 $\hat{U}$   
 (i.e.,  
 cel-  
 lu-  
 lar  
 au-  
 toma-  
 ton  
 rules)  
 are  
 in-  
 finitely  
 many.  
 Why  
 does  
 our  
 uni-  
 verse  
 run  
 this  
 par-  
 tic-  
 u-  
 lar  
 set  
 of  
 rules  
 ca-

pa-  
ble  
of  
pro-  
duc-  
ing  
quarks,  
stars,  
and  
DNA,  
rather  
than  
evolv-  
ing  
into  
dead  
si-  
lence  
or  
chaos  
like  
most  
rules  
in  
Con-  
way's  
Game  
of  
Life?  
This  
is  
the  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
ver-  
sion  
of  
"Fine-  
tuning  
Prob-  
lem".  
We  
don't  
need  
God  
to  
choose



rules;  
we  
only  
need  
to  
un-  
der-  
stand  
**phase**  
**tran-**  
**si-**  
**tions**  
**of**  
**com-**  
**pu-**  
**ta-**  
**tional**  
**com-**  
**plex-**  
**ity.**

**10.1.1**   **10.1.1**  
**Clas-**  
**si-**  
**fi-**  
**ca-**  
**tion**  
**of**  
**Rule**  
**Space:**  
**Wol-**  
**fram**  
**Classes**  
**and**  
**Lang-**  
**ton**  
**Pa-**  
**ram-**  
**e-**  
**ter**  
 $\lambda$

Stephen  
Wol-  
fram,  
through  
ex-  
haus-  
tive

study  
of  
one-  
dimensional  
el-  
e-  
men-  
tary  
cel-  
lu-  
lar  
au-  
tomata,  
found  
all  
pos-  
si-  
ble  
rules  
can  
be  
cat-  
e-  
go-  
rized  
into  
four  
be-  
hav-  
ioral  
pat-  
terns:

**Class**  
**I**  
**(Or-**  
**der/Death):**  
Re-  
gard-  
less  
of  
ini-  
tial  
state,  
sys-  
tem  
rapidly  
evolves  
to

single  
uniform  
state  
(e.g.,  
all  
black).  
This  
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
**crys-  
tals**  
or  
**ab-  
so-  
lute  
zero**  
in  
ther-  
mo-  
dy-  
nam-  
ics,  
with  
no  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
pro-  
cess-  
ing  
ca-  
pa-  
bil-  
ity.

**Class**  
**II**  
**(Pe-  
riod/Oscillation):**  
Sys-  
tem  
evolves  
to  
sim-

ple,  
 lo-  
 cal  
 pe-  
 ri-  
 odic  
 struc-  
 tures.  
 Such  
 rules  
 can  
 only  
 store  
 lim-  
 ited  
 bits,  
 un-  
 able  
 to  
 per-  
 form  
 long-  
 range  
 com-  
 mu-  
 ni-  
 ca-  
 tion.

**Class  
 III  
 (Chaos/Random):**  
 Sys-  
 tem  
 evolves  
 to  
 dis-  
 or-  
 dered,  
 seem-  
 ingly  
 ran-  
 dom  
 pat-  
 terns  
 (ac-  
 tu-  
 ally  
 en-

encrypted  
de-  
ter-  
min-  
ism).  
Al-  
though  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
con-  
tent  
is  
huge  
(high  
en-  
tropy),  
struc-  
tures  
have  
no  
cor-  
re-  
la-  
tions,  
un-  
able  
to  
form  
sta-  
ble  
"ob-  
jects."  
This  
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
**ther-  
mal  
equi-  
lib-  
rium**  
or  
**white  
noise.**

**Class**

**IV**  
**(Complex/Computation):**  
 This  
 is  
 the  
 rarest  
 class.  
 System  
 evolves  
 complex,  
 long-range  
 correlated  
 local  
 structures  
 (particles,  
 gliders),  
 which  
 can  
 move,  
 collide,  
 annihilate,  
 or  
 interact  
 through  
 logic  
 gates  
 in  
 background.  
 Such  
 rules  
 are

proven  
to  
be  
**Tur-  
ing  
Com-  
plete.**  
Our  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
uni-  
verse  
clearly  
be-  
longs  
to  
**Class  
IV.**  
Only  
such  
rules  
can  
sup-  
port  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
stor-  
age  
(sta-  
bil-  
ity),  
trans-  
mis-  
sion  
(pho-  
tons),  
and  
pro-  
cess-  
ing  
(in-  
ter-  
ac-  
tions),  
thereby  
sup-

port-  
ing  
birth  
of  
life.  
Christopher  
Lang-  
ton  
in-  
tro-  
duced  
a  
pa-  
ram-  
e-  
ter  
 $\lambda$   
(pro-  
por-  
tion  
of  
non-  
zero  
out-  
puts  
in  
rule  
ta-  
ble)  
to  
quan-  
tify  
this  
clas-  
si-  
fi-  
ca-  
tion.  
He  
found  
that  
as  
 $\lambda$   
in-  
creases  
from  
0  
to  
1,



sys-  
tem  
un-  
der-  
goes  
phase  
tran-  
si-  
tion  
from  
"or-  
der"  
to  
"chaos."

**Class**

**IV**

**rules**

**are**

**ex-**

**actly**

**at**

**crit-**

**i-**

**cal**

**point**

**of**

**this**

**phase**

**tran-**

**si-**

**tion.**

**10.1.2 10.1.2**

**Crit-**

**i-**

**cal-**

**ity**

**Hy-**

**poth-**

**e-**

**sis:**

**Edge**

**of**

**Chaos**

We

pro-

pose

a

Crit-  
i-  
cal-  
ity  
Hy-  
poth-  
e-  
sis  
about  
cos-  
mic  
ori-  
gin:

Rules  
 $\hat{U}$   
ca-  
pa-  
ble  
of  
pro-  
duc-  
ing  
”phys-  
i-  
cal  
uni-  
verse”  
must  
be  
at  
second-  
order  
phase  
tran-  
si-  
tion  
edge  
be-  
tween  
or-  
dered  
phase  
and  
chaotic  
phase.  
Near  
crit-  
i-

cal  
point,  
sys-  
tem's  
cor-  
re-  
la-  
tion  
length  
 $\xi$   
tends  
to  
in-  
fin-  
ity  
( $\xi \sim$   
 $|T -$   
 $T_c|^{-\nu}$ ).  
This  
means:

**Long-  
Range  
Forces:**  
Al-  
though  
un-  
der-  
ly-  
ing  
in-  
ter-  
ac-  
tions  
are  
strictly  
lo-  
cal  
(only  
talk-  
ing  
to  
neigh-  
bors),  
due  
to  
scale-  
free  
na-

ture  
of  
crit-  
i-  
cal  
state,  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
can  
ef-  
fec-  
tively  
prop-  
a-  
gate  
to  
in-  
fin-  
ity.  
This  
ex-  
plains  
why  
grav-  
ity  
and  
elec-  
tro-  
mag-  
netic  
forces  
are  
long-  
range  
(mass-  
less  
bosons  
cor-  
re-  
spond  
to  
crit-  
i-  
cal  
modes).

**Self-**

**Similarity:**

Sys-  
tem  
ex-  
hibits  
frac-  
tal  
struc-  
tures  
and  
power-  
law  
dis-  
tri-  
bu-  
tions.  
This  
ex-  
plains  
cross-  
scale  
struc-  
tural  
sim-  
i-  
lar-  
ity  
in  
uni-  
verse  
(from  
atoms  
to  
galaxy  
clus-  
ters).

**Maximum  
Com-  
plex-  
ity:**

At  
this  
point,  
sys-  
tem's  
Shan-  
non  
en-

tropy  
is  
nei-  
ther  
0  
(fully  
or-  
dered)  
nor  
max-  
i-  
mum  
(fully  
ran-  
dom),  
but  
at  
state  
ca-  
pa-  
ble  
of  
ac-  
com-  
mo-  
dat-  
ing  
max-  
i-  
mum  
”Log-  
i-  
cal  
Depth”.

**10.1.3 10.1.3**  
**Why**  
**Crit-**  
**i-**  
**cal**  
**State?**

Even  
with-  
out  
de-  
sign-  
ers,  
**Self-**  
**Organized**

Criticality (SOC) mechanisms will drive systems to automatically evolve to critical point. Like sand-pile collapse models, if there exists some "meta-rule" allowing  $\hat{U}$  to fine-tune over time (e.g., through

vacuum decay or cosmic natural selection), then only those sub-universes evolving to critical state can produce observers. Therefore, our universe is so exquisite not because it was carefully designed, but because



it  
is  
a  
**sur-**  
**vivor**—it  
is  
the  
only  
crit-  
i-  
cal  
bub-  
ble  
ca-  
pa-  
ble  
of  
pro-  
duc-  
ing  
”mean-  
ing”  
through  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion  
among  
count-  
less  
ru-  
ins  
of  
death  
and  
chaos.

## 10.2 10.2

Phys-  
i-  
cal  
Pro-  
jec-  
tion  
of  
Gödel's  
In-  
com-  
plete-  
ness:  
The  
Bound-  
ary  
of  
Ag-  
nos-  
ti-  
cism

If  
the  
uni-  
verse  
is  
es-  
sen-  
tially  
a  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
struc-  
ture  
(Ax-  
iom  
 $\Omega$ ),  
does  
it

in-  
herit  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
ics'  
deep-  
est  
cracks?  
In  
1931,  
Kurt  
Gödel  
proved  
the  
First  
In-  
com-  
plete-  
ness  
The-  
o-  
rem,  
shat-  
ter-  
ing  
Hilbert's  
dream  
of  
ax-  
iom-  
a-  
tiz-  
ing  
all  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
truth.  
The  
the-  
o-  
rem  
states:  
**Any**  
**suf-**  
**fi-**

ciently  
pow-  
er-  
ful  
and  
self-  
consistent  
for-  
mal  
sys-  
tem  
con-  
tains  
propo-  
si-  
tions  
that  
can  
nei-  
ther  
be  
proven  
nor  
dis-  
proven  
within  
its  
frame-  
work.  
For  
a  
long  
time,  
physi-  
cists  
thought  
this  
was  
just  
some  
pathol-  
ogy  
of  
pure  
logic,  
un-  
re-  
lated  
to

the  
real  
world.  
Af-  
ter  
all,  
New-  
to-  
nian  
me-  
chan-  
ics  
and  
gen-  
eral  
rel-  
a-  
tiv-  
ity  
are  
based  
on  
cal-  
cu-  
lus,  
not  
Peano  
arith-  
metic.  
However,  
when  
we  
ac-  
cept  
**QCA**  
**dis-**  
**crete**  
**on-**  
**tol-**  
**ogy**,  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
be-  
comes  
log-

i-  
 cal  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tions.  
 Gödel's  
 ghost  
 im-  
 me-  
 di-  
 ately  
 ap-  
 pears  
 on  
 physics'  
 bound-  
 aries.  
 This  
 sec-  
 tion  
 will  
 ex-  
 plore  
 two  
 phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 pro-  
 jec-  
 tions  
 of  
 in-  
 com-  
 plete-  
 ness  
 the-  
 o-  
 rem  
 in  
 com-  
 pu-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 uni-  
 verse:  
**Com-  
 pu-  
 ta-**

tional  
Ir-  
re-  
ducibil-  
ity  
(bound-  
ary  
of  
pre-  
dic-  
tion)  
and  
Chaitin  
In-  
com-  
plete-  
ness  
(bound-  
ary  
of  
cog-  
ni-  
tion).

10.2.1 10.2.1  
Death  
of  
Laplace's  
De-  
mon:  
Com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
Ir-  
re-  
ducibil-  
ity

Classical  
de-  
ter-  
min-  
ism  
promised  
an  
il-  
lu-  
sion

of  
 om-  
 ni-  
 science—Laplace’s  
 De-  
 mon.  
 If  
 know-  
 ing  
 all  
 par-  
 ti-  
 cles’  
 po-  
 si-  
 tions  
 and  
 mo-  
 menta  
 at  
 this  
 mo-  
 ment,  
 and  
 all  
 force  
 laws,  
 the  
 de-  
 mon  
 could  
 cal-  
 cu-  
 late  
 state  
 at  
 any  
 fu-  
 ture  
 time.  
 In  
 QCA  
 uni-  
 verse,  
 al-  
 though  
 evo-  
 lu-  
 tion



rule  
 $\hat{U}$   
 is  
 strictly  
 de-  
 ter-  
 min-  
 is-  
 tic,  
 Laplace's  
 De-  
 mon  
 dies  
 from  
**com-**  
**pu-**  
**ta-**  
**tional**  
**cost.**  
 Stephen  
 Wol-  
 fram  
 pro-  
 posed  
 con-  
 cept  
 of  
**Com-**  
**pu-**  
**ta-**  
**tional**  
**Ir-**  
**re-**  
**ducibil-**  
**ity.**  
 For  
 sys-  
 tems  
 like  
 our  
 uni-  
 verse  
 in  
 "Class  
 IV"  
 (com-  
 plex  
 class),  
 their

evo-  
lu-  
tion  
pro-  
cesses  
can-  
not  
be  
"short-  
cut"  
pre-  
dicted  
through  
sim-  
ple  
for-  
mu-  
las.

### **Reducible Sys- tems:**

Like  
plan-  
e-  
tary  
or-  
bits  
(two-  
body  
prob-  
lem).  
We  
can  
di-  
rectly  
sub-  
sti-  
tute  
for-  
mula  
 $x(t) =$   
 $x_0 +$   
 $v_0 t +$   
 $\frac{1}{2} a t^2,$   
in-  
stantly  
cal-  
cu-

lat-  
ing  
po-  
si-  
tion  
a  
mil-  
lion  
years  
later  
with-  
out  
sim-  
u-  
lat-  
ing  
ev-  
ery  
sec-  
ond  
in  
be-  
tween.

**Irreducible**  
**Sys-**  
**tems:**  
Like  
QCA  
uni-  
verse.  
To  
de-  
ter-  
mine  
sys-  
tem  
state  
af-  
ter  
 $t$   
steps,  
the  
only  
way  
is  
**to**  
**let**  
**sys-**

tem  
(or  
its  
sim-  
u-  
la-  
tor)  
run  
step  
by  
step  
 $t$   
times.  
This  
leads  
to  
a  
pro-  
found  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
corol-  
lary:

**Prediction**  
**Para-**  
**dox**  
**The-**  
**o-**  
**rem:**

An  
ob-  
server  
in-  
side  
a  
sys-  
tem  
can-  
not  
ob-  
tain  
com-  
plete  
in-  
for-  
ma-

tion  
about  
sys-  
tem  
at  
time  
 $t$   
be-  
fore  
time  
 $t$ .

**Proof:**

Assume  
ob-  
server  
builds  
a  
"pre-  
dic-  
tion  
ma-  
chine"  
to  
sim-  
u-  
late  
uni-  
verse.

For  
pre-  
cise  
pre-  
dic-  
tion,  
pre-  
dic-  
tion  
ma-  
chine  
must  
sim-  
u-  
late  
ev-  
ery  
logic  
gate  
op-

er-  
a-  
tion  
of  
uni-  
verse.

To  
run  
faster  
than  
uni-  
verse  
it-  
self  
(pre-  
dict  
ahead),  
pre-  
dic-  
tion  
ma-  
chine's  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion  
speed  
must  
ex-  
ceed  
uni-  
verse's  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
speed.

According  
to  
Light  
Path  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion  
The-  
o-  
rem,

$v_{int} \leq$   
 $c$ .  
 Uni-  
 verse  
 it-  
 self  
 is  
 al-  
 ready  
 a  
 com-  
 puter  
 run-  
 ning  
 at  
 max-  
 i-  
 mum  
 com-  
 pu-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 power.

Therefore,  
 pre-  
 dic-  
 tion  
 ma-  
 chine  
 can-  
 not  
 be  
 faster  
 than  
 uni-  
 verse.  
**Fastest**  
**sim-**  
**u-**  
**la-**  
**tor**  
**is**  
**the**  
**uni-**  
**verse**  
**it-**  
**self.**  
 This

means,  
al-  
though  
fu-  
ture  
is  
pre-  
de-  
ter-  
mined,  
it  
is  
**un-  
know-  
able.**  
Fu-  
ture  
is  
not  
"de-  
rived,"  
but  
"ex-  
e-  
cuted."  
Time  
pas-  
sage  
is  
not  
an  
il-  
lu-  
sion,  
but  
nec-  
es-  
sary  
cost  
to  
de-  
com-  
press  
ir-  
re-  
ducible  
com-  
pu-  
ta-



tion.

## 10.2.2 10.2.2

Chaitin

In-

com-

plete-

ness:

Ul-

ti-

mate

Res-

o-

lu-

tion

Limit

of

The-

ory

Correspondence

of

Gödel's

the-

o-

rem

in

in-

for-

ma-

tion

the-

ory

is

Al-

go-

rith-

mic

In-

for-

ma-

tion

The-

ory

In-

com-

plete-

ness

pro-

posed  
 by  
 Gre-  
 gory  
 Chaitin.  
 Chaitin  
 de-  
 fined  
**Kol-  
 mogorov  
 Com-  
 plex-  
 ity**  
 $K(x)$ ,  
 length  
 (bit  
 num-  
 ber)  
 of  
 short-  
 est  
 pro-  
 gram  
 re-  
 quired  
 to  
 gen-  
 er-  
 ate  
 string  
 $x$ .  
 He  
 proved  
 a  
 de-  
 spair-  
 ing  
 the-  
 o-  
 rem:

**Chaitin  
 In-  
 com-  
 plete-  
 ness  
 The-  
 o-  
 rem:**

A  
for-  
mal  
sys-  
tem  
(for-  
mal  
the-  
ory)  
con-  
tain-  
ing  
 $N$   
bits  
of  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
can-  
not  
prove  
com-  
plex-  
ity  
 $K(x)$   
of  
any  
string  
is  
much  
greater  
than  
 $N$ .

In  
physics,  
this  
means:  
**Com-  
plex-  
ity  
of  
our  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
the-  
o-**

ries  
(ax-  
iom  
sets)  
lim-  
its  
up-  
per  
bound  
of  
truth  
we  
can  
un-  
der-  
stand.

Theory  
as  
**Com-  
pres-  
sion:**  
Physics'  
goal  
is  
find-  
ing  
sim-  
ple  
laws  
(such  
as  
Ax-  
iom  
 $\Omega$ ),  
with  
small  
com-  
plex-  
ity  
 $K(\text{Theory})$ ,  
but  
ca-  
pa-  
ble  
of  
gen-  
er-  
at-

ing  
ex-  
tremely  
com-  
plex  
phe-  
nom-  
ena  
 $K(\text{Universe}) \gg$   
 $K(\text{Theory})$ .

**Boundary  
of  
Un-  
der-  
stand-  
ing:**

If  
some  
phe-  
nom-  
ena  
in  
uni-  
verse  
(such  
as  
spe-  
cific  
en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment  
state  
in-  
side  
a  
black  
hole,  
or  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
endgame  
of  
a  
chaotic  
sys-  
tem)

have  
log-  
i-  
cal  
depth  
ex-  
ceed-  
ing  
com-  
plex-  
ity  
of  
our  
the-  
o-  
ret-  
i-  
cal  
sys-  
tem,  
then  
these  
phe-  
nom-  
ena  
are  
**ran-  
dom**  
to  
us.  
This  
ex-  
plains  
an-  
other  
source  
of  
ran-  
dom-  
ness  
in  
quan-  
tum  
me-  
chan-  
ics.  
Be-  
sides  
hori-

zon  
trun-  
ca-  
tion  
de-  
scribed  
by  
Born's  
rule,  
there  
is  
also  
**Al-**  
**go-**  
**rith-**  
**mic**  
**Ran-**  
**dom-**  
**ness.**  
Some  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
se-  
quences  
(such  
as  
dec-  
i-  
mal  
dig-  
its  
of  
 $\pi$ ,  
or  
pseudo-  
random  
out-  
put  
of  
QCA)  
are  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cally  
de-  
ter-

min-  
is-  
tic,  
but  
be-  
cause  
no  
al-  
go-  
rithm  
smaller  
than  
them-  
selves  
can  
de-  
scribe  
them,  
they  
are  
equiv-  
a-  
lent  
to  
true  
ran-  
dom-  
ness  
to  
any  
fi-  
nite  
ob-  
server.

### 10.2.3 10.2. Ul- ti- mate Task of Physics

Does  
this  
mean  
physics  
has  
reached



its  
end?  
No.  
Gödel  
and  
Chaitin  
de-  
lin-  
eated  
bound-  
aries  
of  
"om-  
ni-  
science,"  
but  
also  
pointed  
out  
essence  
of  
"un-  
der-  
stand-  
ing."  
If  
uni-  
verse's  
un-  
der-  
ly-  
ing  
rules  
 $\hat{U}$   
are  
sim-  
ple  
(e.g.,  
 $K(\hat{U})$ )  
only  
thou-  
sands  
of  
bits),  
then  
we  
have  
ev-  
ery

hope  
 of  
 find-  
 ing  
 it.  
 This  
 is  
 the  
 so-  
 called  
**The-  
 ory  
 of  
 Ev-  
 ery-  
 thing.**  
 But  
 even  
 if  
 we  
 find  
 $\hat{U}$ ,  
 we  
 can-  
 not  
 pre-  
 dict  
 in-  
 finitely  
 rich  
 re-  
 sults  
 gen-  
 er-  
 ated  
 by  
 it  
 $(|\Psi(t)\rangle)$ .  
 We  
 can  
 only  
 un-  
 der-  
 stand  
**mech-  
 a-  
 nisms,**  
 can-  
 not

ex-  
haust  
**man-  
i-  
fes-  
ta-  
tions.**

#### 10.2.4 10.2. Con- clu- sion

Agnosticism  
is  
not  
an  
ex-  
cuse  
for  
fail-  
ure,  
but  
guar-  
an-  
tee  
of  
cos-  
mic  
ra-  
tio-  
nal-  
ity.  
Precisely  
be-  
cause  
Gödel  
in-  
com-  
plete-  
ness  
and  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
ir-  
re-  
ducibil-  
ity

ex-  
ist,  
uni-  
verse  
is  
not  
just  
a  
rigid  
loop  
player.  
It  
al-  
lows  
emer-  
gence  
of  
**Nov-  
elty.**  
Even  
for  
God  
(if  
bound  
by  
logic),  
fu-  
ture  
is  
an  
un-  
opened  
gift.  
Complexity,  
life,  
and  
con-  
scious-  
ness  
we  
see  
in  
uni-  
verse  
are  
pre-  
cisely  
flow-  
ers

logic  
blooms  
at  
un-  
de-  
cid-  
able  
edges.

### 10.3 10.3 Are We Play- ers or NPCs?

---

On  
the  
Sta-  
tus  
of  
Free  
Will  
in  
De-  
ter-  
min-  
is-  
tic  
QCA

Finally,  
we  
ar-  
rive  
at  
the  
most  
un-  
set-  
tling,

most  
 soul-  
 touching  
 ques-  
 tion:  
 In  
 a  
 QCA  
 uni-  
 verse  
 de-  
 fined  
 by  
 Ax-  
 iom  
 $\Omega$ ,  
 strictly  
 de-  
 ter-  
 min-  
 is-  
 tic  
 and  
 uni-  
 tar-  
 ily  
 evolv-  
 ing,  
 is  
 there  
 still  
 room  
 for  
**Free**  
**Will?**  
 If  
 uni-  
 verse's  
 state  
 $|\Psi(t+1)\rangle$   
 is  
 com-  
 pletely  
 de-  
 ter-  
 mined  
 by  
 $\hat{U}|\Psi(t)\rangle$ ,

then  
 ini-  
 tial  
 state  
 $|\Psi(0)\rangle$   
 at  
 Big  
 Bang  
 mo-  
 ment  
 seems  
 to  
 have  
 al-  
 ready  
 locked  
 ev-  
 ery  
 de-  
 tail  
 of  
 me  
 writ-  
 ing  
 this  
 sen-  
 tence  
 and  
 you  
 read-  
 ing  
 it  
 13.8  
 bil-  
 lion  
 years  
 later.  
 Does  
 this  
 mean  
 we  
 are  
 not  
 mas-  
 ters  
 of  
 our  
 own  
 fate,

but  
 non-  
 player  
 char-  
 ac-  
 ters  
 (NPCs)  
 driven  
 by  
 an-  
 cient  
 code,  
 me-  
 chan-  
 i-  
 cally  
 recit-  
 ing  
 lines  
 in  
 a  
 movie  
 with  
 a  
 pre-  
 written  
 script?  
 In  
 this  
 book's  
 frame-  
 work,  
 we  
 will  
 pro-  
 vide  
 a  
 physics-  
 based  
**Com-  
 pat-  
 i-  
 bil-  
 ism**  
 an-  
 swer  
 based  
 on  
**Com-**



pu-  
ta-  
tional  
Ir-  
re-  
ducibil-  
ity  
and  
Cy-  
ber-  
net-  
ics.  
We  
will  
prove:  
**De-  
ter-  
min-  
ism  
not  
only  
doesn't  
ex-  
clude  
free-  
dom,  
but  
is  
the  
foun-  
da-  
tion  
for  
free  
will  
to  
ex-  
ist.**

### 10.3.1 10.3. Free- dom as Un- pre- dictabil- ity: De- con- struct- ing Il- lu- sion of Fa- tal- ism

People's  
fear  
of  
"de-  
ter-  
min-  
ism"  
of-  
ten  
stems  
from  
equat-  
ing  
it  
with  
"fa-  
tal-  
ism."  
Fa-  
tal-  
ism  
be-  
lieves:  
What-  
ever  
you  
do,  
out-  
come

is  
pre-  
de-  
ter-  
mined.  
But  
in  
QCA  
uni-  
verse,  
out-  
come  
pre-  
cisely  
de-  
pends  
on  
**what**  
**you**  
**do**—i.e.,  
your  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
pro-  
cess.  
**Computational**  
**Ir-**  
**re-**  
**ducibil-**  
**ity**  
we  
dis-  
cussed  
in  
Sec-  
tion  
10.2  
plays  
a  
de-  
ci-  
sive  
role  
here.  
For  
Class  
IV

complex systems (such as our universe or human brains), to predict system state at time  $T$ , **the only way is to run this system  $T$  steps.** There is no God's-eye-view "script" or "lookup table" letting you skip pro-

cess  
and  
di-  
rectly  
see  
end-  
ing.  
This  
means:

**Unpredictabil**  
No  
one—including  
your-  
self,  
even  
God  
with  
a  
su-  
per-  
com-  
puter—can  
cal-  
cu-  
late  
what  
you  
will  
do  
faster  
than  
you  
be-  
fore  
you  
make  
a  
de-  
ci-  
sion.  
Be-  
cause  
to  
sim-  
u-  
late  
you,  
this

com-  
puter  
must  
be  
at  
least  
as  
com-  
plex  
as  
you,  
and  
can-  
not  
run  
faster  
than  
 $c$   
(Light  
Path  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion).

**Process**  
**Ne-**  
**ces-**  
**sity:**  
Your  
”de-  
ci-  
sion”  
doesn’t  
ex-  
ist  
at  
some  
pre-  
set  
point  
in  
fu-  
ture,  
but  
is  
**gen-**  
**er-**  
**ated**

in  
your  
cur-  
rent  
think-  
ing  
pro-  
cess.  
With-  
out  
your  
think-  
ing  
(com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion),  
there  
is  
no  
that  
de-  
ci-  
sion.  
In  
this  
sense,  
you  
are  
free.  
This  
free-  
dom  
doesn't  
mean  
"abil-  
ity  
to  
vi-  
o-  
late  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
laws,"  
but  
"**your**  
**be-**  
**hav-**

ior  
 can-  
 not  
 be  
 com-  
 pressed  
 into  
 for-  
 mu-  
 las  
 sim-  
 pler  
 than  
 your-  
 self.”  
 Your  
 fu-  
 ture  
 is  
 com-  
 puted,  
 not  
 pre-  
 de-  
 fined.  
**Corollary:**  
 If  
 an  
 en-  
 tity  
 can-  
 not  
 be  
 per-  
 fectly  
 pre-  
 dicted  
 by  
 ex-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 ob-  
 servers  
 (un-  
 less  
 repli-  
 cat-  
 ing  
 it



in  
real-  
time),  
then  
for  
all  
in-  
tents  
and  
pur-  
poses,  
it  
is  
an  
au-  
tonomous  
”player,”  
not  
an  
NPC  
act-  
ing  
ac-  
cord-  
ing  
to  
sim-  
ple  
scripts.

**10.3.2    10.3.**  
**Re-**  
**verse**  
**Causal-**  
**ity**  
**and**  
**Tele-**  
**ol-**  
**ogy:**  
**Will**  
**as**  
**Higher-**  
**Order**  
**Causal**  
**Force**

In  
un-  
der-

ly-  
 ing  
 QCA  
 net-  
 works,  
 causal  
 ar-  
 rows  
 are  
 strictly  
 for-  
 ward:  
 $t \rightarrow$   
 $t+$   
 1.  
 But  
 at  
 emer-  
 gent  
 macro-  
 scopic  
 level,  
 as  
 we  
 de-  
 fined  
 in  
 Chap-  
 ter  
 8,  
 ob-  
 servers  
 (agents)  
 pos-  
 sess  
**in-**  
**ter-**  
**nal**  
**mod-**  
**els.**  
 When  
 a  
 sys-  
 tem  
 min-  
 i-  
 mizes  
 fu-  
 ture

vari-  
a-  
tional  
free  
en-  
ergy  
(pre-  
dic-  
tion  
er-  
ror)  
based  
on  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
model,  
causal-  
ity  
un-  
der-  
goes  
a  
mar-  
velous  
cy-  
ber-  
netic  
in-  
ver-  
sion:

**Low-  
Level  
Mat-  
ter**  
is  
sub-  
ject  
to  
**Push:**  
Past  
states  
push  
it  
to-  
ward  
fu-  
ture

(like  
 bil-  
 liard  
 ball  
 col-  
 li-  
 sion).

**High-  
 Level  
 Con-  
 scious-  
 ness**

is  
 sub-  
 ject  
 to  
**Pull:**  
 Fu-  
 ture  
 goals  
 (ex-  
 pected  
 states)

pull  
 it  
 to  
 ad-  
 just  
 cur-  
 rent  
 be-  
 hav-  
 ior  
 (like  
 study-  
 ing  
 for  
 to-  
 mor-  
 row's  
 exam).

Although  
 this  
**Tele-  
 ol-  
 ogy**  
 is  
 still

ex-  
e-  
cuted  
by  
un-  
der-  
ly-  
ing  
uni-  
tary  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
mi-  
cro-  
scop-  
i-  
cally  
(just  
as  
soft-  
ware  
logic  
is  
ul-  
ti-  
mately  
ex-  
e-  
cuted  
by  
tran-  
sis-  
tor  
switches),  
at  
macro-  
scopic  
dy-  
nam-  
ics,  
it  
man-  
i-  
fests  
as  
**Top-  
down  
Cau-**

sa-  
tion.  
**Definition**  
**10.3.1**  
**(Phys-**  
**i-**  
**cal**  
**Def-**  
**i-**  
**ni-**  
**tion**  
**of**  
**Will):**  
Free  
will  
is  
**self-**  
**correction**  
**ca-**  
**pa-**  
**bil-**  
**ity**  
pos-  
sessed  
by  
high  
 $M_I$   
(in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
mass)  
sub-  
sys-  
tems.  
When  
sys-  
tem  
de-  
tects  
cur-  
rent  
tra-  
jec-  
tory  
de-  
vi-  
ates  
from

ex-  
pec-  
ta-  
tions  
of  
its  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
model  
(i.e.,  
free  
en-  
ergy  
 $F$   
in-  
creases),  
it  
can  
call  
re-  
served  
ne-  
gen-  
tropy  
( $v_{int}$ ),  
ac-  
tively  
chang-  
ing  
its  
mi-  
cro-  
scopic  
state  
tra-  
jec-  
tory.  
From  
this  
per-  
spec-  
tive,  
we  
are  
not  
pas-  
sive  
NPCs.

We  
 are  
 sub-  
 rou-  
 tines  
 in  
 uni-  
 verse's  
 great  
 pro-  
 gram  
 that  
 have  
 ob-  
 tained  
 "self-  
 modification  
 per-  
 mis-  
 sions"  
 (Self-  
 modifying  
 Code).  
 We  
 not  
 only  
 run  
 code,  
 we  
 also  
 write  
 code  
 (through  
 learn-  
 ing  
 and  
 mem-  
 ory  
 re-  
 shap-  
 ing  
 neu-  
 ral  
 synapses/network  
 con-  
 nec-  
 tions).



**10.3.3 10.3. Source of Responsibility: You Are Your Algorithm**

Finally, if choices are results of physical laws, do we still need to take responsibility for behavior? Yes. Because in QCA ontology,

”you”  
are  
that  
spe-  
cific  
al-  
go-  
rith-  
mic  
struc-  
ture  
(topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
knot).

Even  
if  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
laws  
de-  
ter-  
mine  
you’ll  
make  
a  
”bad”  
de-  
ci-  
sion,  
that  
”bad”  
is  
in-  
her-  
ent  
in  
your  
al-  
go-  
rith-  
mic  
struc-  
ture.

Punishment

or  
re-  
ward  
is  
es-  
sen-  
tially  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment's  
**feed-  
back**  
to  
that  
al-  
go-  
rithm,  
aimed  
at  
cor-  
rect-  
ing  
al-  
go-  
rithm's  
pa-  
ram-  
e-  
ters  
(learn-  
ing),  
or  
iso-  
lat-  
ing  
it  
when  
al-  
go-  
rithm  
can-  
not  
be  
cor-  
rected  
(elim-  
i-  
na-

tion).  
If  
world  
were  
ran-  
dom  
(as  
some  
quan-  
tum  
me-  
chan-  
ics  
in-  
ter-  
pre-  
ta-  
tions  
claim),  
your  
de-  
ci-  
sions  
are  
just  
re-  
sults  
of  
dice-  
throwing,  
then  
you  
wouldn't  
need  
re-  
spon-  
si-  
bil-  
ity.  
Pre-  
cisely  
be-  
cause  
of  
de-  
ter-  
min-  
ism,  
your

choices  
truly  
be-  
long  
to  
**you**  
(sum  
of  
your  
his-  
tory,  
mem-  
ory,  
and  
logic).

**10.3.4 10.3.**  
**Con-**  
**clu-**  
**sion:**  
**Par-**  
**tic-**  
**i-**  
**pa-**  
**tory**  
**Uni-**  
**verse**

Are  
we  
play-  
ers  
or  
NPCs?  
Answer  
de-  
pends  
on  
how  
you  
de-  
fine  
”player.”  
If  
you  
think  
play-  
ers  
must

stand  
 out-  
 side  
 game,  
 un-  
 bound  
 by  
 game  
 rules  
 (phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 laws),  
 then  
 we  
 are  
 in-  
 deed  
 not  
 play-  
 ers,  
 and  
 no  
 such  
 play-  
 ers  
 ex-  
 ist.  
 But  
 if  
 you  
 think  
 play-  
 ers  
 are  
**in-  
 de-  
 pen-  
 dent  
 com-  
 pu-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 en-  
 ti-  
 ties  
 within  
 game  
 ca-**

pa-  
ble  
of  
sens-  
ing  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment,  
build-  
ing  
mod-  
els,  
set-  
ting  
goals,  
and  
ac-  
tu-  
ally  
chang-  
ing  
game  
progress,  
then  
we  
are  
not  
only  
play-  
ers,  
we  
are  
ad-  
vanced  
play-  
ers.  
Universe  
sets  
board  
and  
rules  
through  
Ax-  
iom  
 $\Omega$ ,  
but  
it  
doesn't

set  
game's  
di-  
rec-  
tion.  
This  
game  
is  
played  
step  
by  
step  
by  
us—countless  
en-  
tan-  
gled  
ob-  
servers.  
At  
this  
point,  
we  
have  
com-  
pleted  
ex-  
plo-  
ration  
of  
ul-  
ti-  
mate  
ques-  
tions  
of  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
uni-  
verse.  
Physics  
hasn't  
de-  
prived  
us  
of  
dig-



nity;  
on  
the  
con-  
trary,  
it  
en-  
dows  
us  
with  
no-  
ble  
sta-  
tus  
as  
**cos-  
mic  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
col-  
lab-  
o-  
ra-  
tors.**



Append  
A

Mathe  
Foun-  
da-  
tions

**A.1**   **Appen****A:****Math-****e-****mat-****i-****cal****Foun-****da-****tions****Appendix****A:****Math-****e-****mat-****i-****cal****Foun-****da-****tions**

The

phys-

i-

cal

the-

ory

con-

structed

in

this

book

spans

mul-

ti-

ple

do-

mains

from

mi-

cro-

scopic

dis-

crete

lat-

tices

to

macro-  
scopic  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ous  
space-  
time,  
and  
fur-  
ther  
to  
logic  
and  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion.  
To  
main-  
tain  
nar-  
ra-  
tive  
flu-  
ency  
in  
the  
main  
text,  
many  
deep  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
def-  
i-  
ni-  
tions  
and  
the-  
o-  
rems  
are  
only  
cited  
phys-

i-  
cally.  
This  
ap-  
pendix  
aims  
to  
pro-  
vide  
a  
self-  
consistent,  
stan-  
dard-  
ized  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
tool  
ref-  
er-  
ence  
man-  
ual,  
cov-  
er-  
ing  
core  
con-  
cepts  
of  
Hilbert  
spaces,  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
al-  
ge-  
bras,  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
ge-  
om-  
e-

try,  
and  
graph  
the-  
ory,  
serv-  
ing  
as  
the  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
skele-  
ton  
of  
the  
en-  
tire  
book.

---

### A.1.1 A.1 Hilbert Space Struc- ture of Dis- crete Quan- tum Me- chan- ics

In  
Ax-  
iom  
 $\Omega$ ,  
we  
de-  
fine  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
en-

ti-  
ties  
as  
vec-  
tors  
in  
Hilbert  
space.  
For  
dis-  
crete  
on-  
tol-  
ogy,  
we  
pri-  
mar-  
ily  
fo-  
cus  
on  
finite-  
dimensional  
spaces  
and  
their  
ten-  
sor  
prod-  
ucts.

**A.1.1**  
**Lo-  
cal  
Space  
and  
Ten-  
sor  
Prod-  
uct**

**Local  
Space:**  
Let  
each  
cell  
(lat-  
tice  
point)



$x$   
 be  
 as-  
 so-  
 ci-  
 ated  
 with  
 a  
 $d$ -  
 dimensional  
 com-  
 plex  
 vec-  
 tor  
 space  
 $\mathcal{H}_x \cong$   
 $\mathbb{C}^d$ .  
 For  
 qubit  
 sys-  
 tems,  
 $d =$   
 2,  
 with  
 ba-  
 sis  
 de-  
 noted  
 as  
 $\{|0\rangle, |1\rangle\}$ .  
 Vectors  
 $|\psi\rangle \in$   
 $\mathcal{H}_x$   
 in  
 the  
 space  
 sat-  
 isfy  
 the  
 nor-  
 mal-  
 iza-  
 tion  
 con-  
 di-  
 tion  
 $\langle\psi|\psi\rangle =$   
 1.

**Global  
Space:**

The  
state  
space  
of  
the  
en-  
tire  
sys-  
tem  
is  
the  
ten-  
sor  
prod-  
uct  
of  
all  
lo-  
cal  
spaces:

$$\mathcal{H}_{\text{total}} = \bigotimes_{x \in \Lambda} \mathcal{H}_x$$

**Note:**

For  
in-  
fi-  
nite  
lat-  
tices  
 $\Lambda$ ,  
this  
ten-  
sor  
prod-  
uct  
must  
be  
un-  
der-  
stood  
in  
the  
sense  
of  
the

al-  
ge-  
braic  
ten-  
sor  
prod-  
uct  
of  
von  
Neu-  
mann  
al-  
ge-  
bras,  
typ-  
i-  
cally  
re-  
stricted  
to  
the  
sep-  
a-  
ra-  
ble  
Hilbert  
space  
spanned  
by  
**fi-  
nite  
ex-  
ci-  
ta-  
tion  
states**  
(states  
where  
all  
nodes  
ex-  
cept  
finitely  
many  
are  
in  
the  
ground  
state

$|0\rangle\rangle).$

### A.1.2 En- tan- gle- ment and Schmidt De- com- po- si- tion

For  
a  
com-  
pos-  
ite  
sys-  
tem  
 $\mathcal{H}_{AB} =$   
 $\mathcal{H}_A \otimes$   
 $\mathcal{H}_B$ ,  
any  
pure  
state  
 $|\Psi\rangle$   
can  
be  
uniquely  
de-  
com-  
posed  
as:

$$|\Psi\rangle = \sum_{i=1}^k \lambda_i |a_i\rangle$$

where  
 $\lambda_i >$   
0  
are  
Schmidt  
co-  
ef-  
fi-  
cients

sat-  
is-  
fy-  
ing  
 $\sum \lambda_i^2 =$   
 1.  
 $k \leq$   
 $\min(\dim \mathcal{H}_A, \dim \mathcal{H}_B)$   
 is  
 the  
 Schmidt  
 rank.

**Entanglement**  
**En-**  
**tropy:**  
 $S(\rho_A) =$   
 $-\sum \lambda_i^2 \ln \lambda_i^2.$   
 This  
 is  
 the  
 core  
 quan-  
 tity  
 used  
 in  
 Chap-  
 ter  
 4  
 of  
 this  
 book  
 to  
 de-  
 rive  
 grav-  
 i-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 ge-  
 om-  
 e-  
 try.

---

A.1.2	A.2
Op- er- a- tor Al- ge- bra Spec- tral The- ory	Many phys- i- cal in- tu- itions in this book—such as the holo- graphic prin- ci- ple, mod- u- lar Hamil- to- ni- ans, and the en- tan- gle- ment struc- ture of in- for- ma-

tion—rely  
on  
**op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
al-  
ge-  
bras**  
(par-  
tic-  
u-  
larly  
von  
Neu-  
mann  
al-  
ge-  
bras)  
as  
their  
rig-  
or-  
ous  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
lan-  
guage.  
In  
dis-  
crete  
QCA  
on-  
tol-  
ogy,  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
sys-  
tems  
are  
mod-  
eled  
as  
ten-  
sor

products  
of  
local  
Hilbert  
spaces  
 $\mathcal{H}_x$ ,  
and  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
quan-  
ti-  
ties  
(ob-  
serv-  
ables)  
on  
them  
con-  
sti-  
tute  
spe-  
cific  
al-  
ge-  
braic  
struc-  
tures.  
This  
sec-  
tion  
briefly  
in-  
tro-  
duces  
rel-  
e-  
vant  
core  
con-  
cepts.



### A.2.1 Von Neu- mann Al- ge- bras and Fac- tors

Let  
 $\mathcal{H}$   
 be  
 a  
 com-  
 plex  
 Hilbert  
 space  
 (pos-  
 si-  
 bly  
 infinite-  
 dimensional,  
 cor-  
 re-  
 spond-  
 ing  
 to  
 the  
 limit  
 $N \rightarrow$   
 $\infty$ ).  
 $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$   
 is  
 the  
 al-  
 ge-  
 bra  
 of  
 bounded  
 lin-  
 ear  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tors  
 on  
 it.

**Definition**

**A.2.1****(Von****Neu-****mann****Al-****ge-****bra):**

A

\*-

subalgebra

 $\mathcal{M}$ 

of

 $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ 

is

called

a

von

Neu-

mann

al-

ge-

bra

if

it

con-

tains

the

iden-

tity

op-

er-

a-

tor

 $\mathbb{I}$ 

and

sat-

is-

fies

the

**Bi-****com-****mu-****tant****The-****o-****rem:**

$$\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}''$$

where

$\mathcal{M}' =$   
 $\{T \in$   
 $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H}) :$   
 $TA =$   
 $AT, \forall A \in$   
 $\mathcal{M}\}$   
 is  
 the  
 com-  
 mu-  
 tant  
 al-  
 ge-  
 bra  
 of  
 $\mathcal{M}$ .  
 This  
 means  
 $\mathcal{M}$   
 is  
 closed  
 un-  
 der  
 the  
 weak  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tor  
 topol-  
 ogy.  
 In  
 quan-  
 tum  
 field  
 the-  
 ory  
 and  
 holo-  
 graphic  
 the-  
 ory,  
 we  
 par-  
 tic-  
 u-  
 larly  
 fo-  
 cus

on  
**fac-**  
**tors,**  
i.e.,  
von  
Neu-  
mann  
al-  
ge-  
bras  
with  
triv-  
ial  
cen-  
ter:

$$\mathcal{Z}(\mathcal{M}) = \mathcal{M} \cap \mathcal{M}'$$

Von  
Neu-  
mann  
al-  
ge-  
bras  
are  
clas-  
si-  
fied  
into  
three  
types  
based  
on  
the  
prop-  
er-  
ties  
of  
their  
pro-  
jec-  
tion  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tors:

**Type**  
**I:**

Iso-  
 mor-  
 phic  
 to  
 $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ .  
 This  
 is  
 the  
 stan-  
 dard  
 quan-  
 tum  
 me-  
 chan-  
 ics  
 al-  
 ge-  
 bra  
 de-  
 scrib-  
 ing  
 sys-  
 tems  
 with  
 fi-  
 nite  
 de-  
 grees  
 of  
 free-  
 dom  
 (such  
 as  
 spin  
 chains,  
 sin-  
 gle  
 QCA  
 cells).  
 The  
 trace  
 on  
 it  
 is  
 well-  
 defined.

**Type  
 II:**

No  
min-  
i-  
mal  
pro-  
jec-  
tions  
ex-  
ist,  
but  
a  
semifi-  
nite  
trace  
ex-  
ists.  
This  
ap-  
pears  
in  
cer-  
tain  
sta-  
tis-  
ti-  
cal  
me-  
chan-  
ics  
mod-  
els.

**Type  
III:**  
The  
most  
mys-  
te-  
ri-  
ous  
and  
im-  
por-  
tant  
type.  
All  
non-  
zero  
pro-

jections are equivalent to the identity. **Local algebras**  $\mathcal{A}(O)$  in local quantum field theory are typically Type  $\text{III}_1$  factors. This means that in the continuous limit, entanglement entropy within

lo-  
cal  
re-  
gions  
di-  
verges  
(re-  
quir-  
ing  
ul-  
tra-  
vi-  
o-  
let  
cut-  
off),  
which  
is  
pre-  
cisely  
the  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
root  
of  
our  
dis-  
cus-  
sion  
of  
"the  
ne-  
ces-  
sity  
of  
dis-  
crete  
on-  
tol-  
ogy"  
in  
Chap-  
ter  
1.



### A.2.2 Mod- u- lar The- ory (Tomita- Takesaki The- ory)

For  
a  
gen-  
eral  
von  
Neu-  
mann  
al-  
ge-  
bra  
 $\mathcal{M}$   
and  
a  
cyclic  
sep-  
a-  
rat-  
ing  
vec-  
tor  
 $|\Omega\rangle$ ,  
we  
can-  
not  
de-  
fine  
a  
stan-  
dard  
den-  
sity  
ma-  
trix  
 $\rho$   
and  
trace  
as  
in  
Type

I  
al-  
ge-  
bras.  
To  
de-  
fine  
"states"  
and  
"evo-  
lu-  
tion,"  
we  
need  
**Tomita-  
Takesaki  
mod-  
u-  
lar  
the-  
ory.**  
Define  
the  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
 $S$ :

$$SA|\Omega\rangle = A^\dagger|\Omega\rangle,$$

The  
po-  
lar  
de-  
com-  
po-  
si-  
tion  
of  
 $S$   
is  
 $S =$   
 $J\Delta^{1/2}.$

$J$ :  
Mod-  
u-  
lar

con-  
 ju-  
 ga-  
 tion  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tor,  
 an  
 an-  
 ti-  
 lin-  
 ear  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tor.  
 It  
 es-  
 tab-  
 lishes  
 an  
 iso-  
 mor-  
 phism  
 be-  
 tween  
 al-  
 ge-  
 bra  
 $\mathcal{M}$   
 and  
 its  
 com-  
 mu-  
 tant  
 $\mathcal{M}'$ :  
 $J\mathcal{M}J =$   
 $\mathcal{M}'$ .  
 Phys-  
 i-  
 cally,  
 this  
 cor-  
 re-  
 sponds  
 to  
**CPT**  
 sym-

**me-  
try**  
in  
holo-  
graphic  
du-  
al-  
ity.

$\Delta$ :  
Mod-  
u-  
lar  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor,  
 $\Delta =$   
 $S^\dagger S$ .  
This  
is  
a  
pos-  
i-  
tive  
self-  
adjoint  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor.

**Theorem**  
**A.2.2**  
**(Tomita-  
Takesaki**  
**The-**  
**o-**  
**rem):**  
 $\Delta^{it}$   
gen-  
er-  
ates  
a  
one-  
parameter  
au-  
to-  
mor-  
phism

group  
 $\sigma_t$   
 of  
 $\mathcal{M}$ :

$$\sigma_t(A) = \Delta^{it} A \Delta$$

This  
 is  
 called  
 the  
**mod-  
 u-  
 lar  
 flow.**  
**Physical  
 Mean-  
 ing:**  
 For  
 the  
 vac-  
 uum  
 state  
 $|\Omega\rangle$ ,  
 the  
 mod-  
 u-  
 lar  
 Hamil-  
 to-  
 nian  
 is  
 de-  
 fined  
 as  
 $H_{mod} =$   
 $-\ln \Delta$ .

$$\rho \sim e^{-H_{mod}}$$

This  
 shows  
 that  
**any  
 en-  
 tan-  
 gled  
 state**

in-  
trin-  
si-  
cally  
de-  
fines  
a  
"ther-  
mal  
time  
flow."  
For  
ob-  
servers  
in  
Rindler  
wedges,  
the  
mod-  
u-  
lar  
flow  
ex-  
actly  
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
Lorentz  
boosts,  
and  
the  
mod-  
u-  
lar  
Hamil-  
to-  
nian  
is  
the  
Hamil-  
to-  
nian  
gen-  
er-  
at-  
ing  
such  
ac-

cel-  
er-  
ated  
mo-  
tion.  
This  
di-  
rectly  
con-  
nects  
**quan-  
tum  
en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment**  
with  
**space-  
time  
ge-  
om-  
e-  
try**,  
serv-  
ing  
as  
the  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
foun-  
da-  
tion  
for  
de-  
riv-  
ing  
the  
ori-  
gin  
of  
grav-  
ity  
in  
Chap-  
ter  
4

of  
this  
book.

### **A.2.3 Rel- a- tive En- tropy and Fisher In- for- ma- tion**

In  
the  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
al-  
ge-  
bra  
frame-  
work,  
the  
"dis-  
tance"  
be-  
tween  
two  
states  
 $\psi$   
and  
 $\phi$   
is  
mea-  
sured  
by  
**rel-  
a-  
tive  
en-  
tropy**,  
de-  
fined  
as:



$$S(\psi||\phi) = \langle \psi | \ln$$

where

$\Delta_{\psi,\phi}$

is

the

rel-

a-

tive

mod-

u-

lar

op-

er-

a-

tor.

For

pa-

ram-

e-

ter-

ized

state

fam-

i-

lies

$\rho(\theta)$ ,

the

second-

order

ex-

pan-

sion

of

rel-

a-

tive

en-

tropy

gives

the

**Quan-**

**tum**

**Fisher**

**In-**

**for-**

**ma-**

**tion**

**Met-  
ric  
(QFIM):**

$$S(\rho(\theta)||\rho(\theta+d\theta))$$

This  
is

pre-  
cisely

the  
mi-  
cro-  
scopic  
source

we  
use  
in  
Chap-  
ters

3  
and  
4

to  
con-  
struct  
the  
space-  
time  
met-  
ric

$g_{\mu\nu}$ .  
Space-  
time

ge-  
om-  
e-  
try

is  
es-  
sen-  
tially

the  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
ge-  
om-

e-  
try  
of  
quan-  
tum  
state  
space.

---

### A.1.3 A.3 Cat- e- gory The- ory Foun- da- tions

In  
the  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
the-  
ory  
of  
this  
book,  
**cat-  
e-  
gory  
the-  
ory**  
is  
not  
merely  
an  
ab-  
stract  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
lan-  
guage,  
but

the  
"meta-  
language"  
de-  
scrib-  
ing  
deep  
con-  
nec-  
tions  
be-  
tween  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
pro-  
cesses,  
log-  
i-  
cal  
struc-  
tures,  
and  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tions.  
Par-  
tic-  
u-  
larly  
in  
the  
ax-  
iomatic  
def-  
i-  
ni-  
tion  
of  
quan-  
tum  
cel-  
lu-  
lar

au-  
tomata  
(QCA),  
clas-  
si-  
fi-  
ca-  
tion  
of  
topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
or-  
ders,  
and  
struc-  
tured  
de-  
scrip-  
tion  
of  
holo-  
graphic  
en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment,  
cat-  
e-  
gory  
the-  
ory  
pro-  
vides  
in-  
dis-  
pens-  
able  
tools.

### A.3.1 Basic Definitions: Categories and Functors

**Definition**  
A.3.1  
(Category  $\mathcal{C}$ ):  
A  
category  
consists  
of:

**Object set**  
 $\text{Obj}(\mathcal{C})$ :  
In  
physics,  
objects  
typically  
represent  
state  
spaces  
of  
physical  
systems  
(such

as  
Hilbert  
space  
 $\mathcal{H}$ ).

### **Morphism**

**set**  
 $\text{Hom}(A, B)$ :

For  
any  
two  
ob-  
jects  
 $A, B$ ,  
there  
ex-  
ists  
a  
mor-  
phism  
set  
from  
 $A$   
to  
 $B$ .

In  
physics,  
mor-  
phisms  
rep-  
re-  
sent  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
pro-  
cesses  
(such  
as  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tors  
 $\hat{U}$ ,  
mea-  
sure-

ment  
chan-  
nels  
 $\mathcal{E}$ ).

**Composition**  
**op-**  
**er-**  
**a-**  
**tion**  
 $\circ$ :  
Mor-  
phisms  
sat-  
isfy  
as-  
so-  
cia-  
tiv-  
ity  
 $(f \circ$   
 $g) \circ$   
 $h =$   
 $f \circ$   
 $(g \circ$   
 $h)$ .

**Identity**  
**mor-**  
**phism**  
 $1_A$ :  
Each  
ob-  
ject  
has  
a  
”do  
noth-  
ing”  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tion.  
**Definition**  
**A.3.2**  
**(Func-**  
**tor**  
 $\mathcal{F})$ :  
A



func-  
tor  
is  
a  
structure-  
preserving  
map  
be-  
tween  
cat-  
e-  
gories.  
It  
maps  
ob-  
jects  
of  
cat-  
e-  
gory  
 $\mathcal{C}$   
to  
ob-  
jects  
of  
cat-  
e-  
gory  
 $\mathcal{D}$ ,  
maps  
mor-  
phisms  
to  
mor-  
phisms,  
and  
pre-  
serves  
com-  
po-  
si-  
tion  
re-  
la-  
tions.

**Physical  
mean-  
ing:**

The  
 holo-  
 graphic  
 prin-  
 ci-  
 ple  
 can  
 be  
 for-  
 mal-  
 ized  
 as  
 a  
 func-  
 tor  
 (or  
 dual  
 equiv-  
 a-  
 lence)  
 from  
 the  
 "bound-  
 ary  
 con-  
 for-  
 mal  
 field  
 the-  
 ory  
 cat-  
 e-  
 gory"  
 to  
 the  
 "bulk  
 grav-  
 i-  
 ta-  
 tional  
 the-  
 ory  
 cat-  
 e-  
 gory."

### A.3.2 Monoidal Cat- e- gories Ten- sor Net- works

To  
de-  
scribe  
**com-  
pos-  
ite**

**sys-  
tems**  
 $(\mathcal{H}_A \otimes \mathcal{H}_B)$   
in

quan-  
tum  
me-  
chan-  
ics,  
we  
need

to  
in-  
tro-  
duce  
**monoidal  
cat-  
e-  
gories.**

**Definition  
A.3.3**

**(Monoidal  
Cat-  
e-  
gory**

$(\mathcal{C}, \otimes, I)$ ):  
This

is  
a  
cat-  
e-  
gory  
equipped

with  
a  
**ten-  
sor  
prod-  
uct  
func-  
tor**  
 $\otimes$  :  
 $\mathcal{C} \times$   
 $\mathcal{C} \rightarrow$   
 $\mathcal{C}$   
and  
a  
**unit  
ob-  
ject**  
 $I$ .

**Associativity  
con-  
straint:**  
 $(A \otimes$   
 $B) \otimes$   
 $C \cong$   
 $A \otimes$   
 $(B \otimes$   
 $C)$   
(via  
nat-  
u-  
ral  
iso-  
mor-  
phism  
 $\alpha$ ).

**Unit  
con-  
straint:**  
 $I \otimes$   
 $A \cong$   
 $A \cong$   
 $A \otimes$   
 $I$ .  
**Graphical  
Cal-  
cu-  
lus:**

Morphisms  
in  
monoidal  
cat-  
e-  
gories  
can  
be  
rep-  
re-  
sented  
us-  
ing  
**string**  
**di-**  
**a-**  
**grams.**

Objects  
are  
wires.

Morphisms  
are  
boxes  
con-  
nect-  
ing  
wires.

Tensor  
prod-  
uct  
is  
par-  
al-  
lel  
place-  
ment  
of  
wires.

Composition  
is  
se-  
rial  
con-  
nec-  
tion

of  
wires.  
**Physical  
ap-  
pli-  
ca-  
tions:**  
Evo-  
lu-  
tion  
pro-  
cesses  
of  
QCA,  
ten-  
sor  
net-  
work  
states  
(such  
as  
MPS,  
PEPS),  
and  
quan-  
tum  
cir-  
cuit  
di-  
a-  
grams  
are  
es-  
sen-  
tially  
graph-  
i-  
cal  
cal-  
cu-  
lus  
in  
strict  
monoidal  
cat-  
e-  
gories.  
This  
lan-

guage  
makes  
com-  
plex  
ten-  
sor  
con-  
trac-  
tion  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tions  
in-  
tu-  
itive  
and  
eas-  
ily  
ver-  
i-  
fi-  
able.

### **A.3.3 Dag- ger Com- pact Cat- e- gories**

To  
de-  
scribe  
**uni-  
tar-  
ity**  
and  
**en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment**  
(such  
as  
prepa-  
ra-  
tion  
and

mea-  
sure-  
ment  
of  
Bell  
states)  
in  
quan-  
tum  
me-  
chan-  
ics,  
we

need  
richer  
struc-  
tures.

**Definition**

**A.3.4**

**(Dag-**

**ger**

**Cat-**

**e-**

**gory**

**†-**

**Category):**

This

is

a

cat-

e-

gory

equipped

with

a

con-

travari-

ant

func-

tor

$\dagger :$

$\mathcal{C}^{op} \rightarrow$

$\mathcal{C}$

sat-

is-

fy-

ing

$f^{\dagger\dagger} =$

$f$ .



**Physical  
mean-  
ing:**  
Cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
Her-  
mi-  
tian  
con-  
ju-  
ga-  
tion  
in  
Hilbert  
space.  
Uni-  
tary  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
 $U$   
is  
de-  
fined  
as  
 $U^\dagger \circ$   
 $U =$   
 $1_A$ .

**Definition  
A.3.5  
(Com-  
pact  
Closed  
Cat-  
e-  
gory):**  
This  
is  
a  
monoidal  
cat-  
e-  
gory  
with  
"dual

ob-  
jects”  
 $A$

**Physical  
mean-  
ing:**

$\eta$   
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
prepa-  
ra-  
tion  
of  
max-  
i-  
mally  
en-  
tan-  
gled  
states  
(such  
as  
Bell  
state  
 $|\Phi^+\rangle$ ).

$\epsilon$   
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
mea-  
sure-  
ment  
(pro-  
jec-  
tion)  
of  
max-  
i-  
mally  
en-  
tan-  
gled

states.

Snake  
equa-  
tions  
cor-  
re-  
spond  
to  
the  
ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric  
essence  
of  
quan-  
tum  
tele-  
por-  
ta-  
tion  
pro-  
to-  
cols:  
curved  
space-  
time  
lines  
(en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment)  
can  
trans-  
mit  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
from  
one  
end  
to  
the  
other.

**Conclusion:**  
The  
ax-

iomatic  
 sys-  
 tem  
 of  
 quan-  
 tum  
 me-  
 chan-  
 ics  
 (QM)  
 can  
 be  
 ex-  
 tremely  
 el-  
 e-  
 gantly  
 re-  
 con-  
 structed  
 as:  
**Phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 pro-  
 cesses  
 con-  
 sti-  
 tute  
 a  
 dag-  
 ger  
 com-  
 pact  
 cat-  
 e-  
 gory  
 (DCC)  
 on  
 Hilbert  
 space.**  
 In  
 the  
 the-  
 o-  
 ret-  
 i-  
 cal  
 frame-

work  
of  
this  
book,  
the  
QCA  
de-  
fined  
by  
Ax-  
iom  
 $\Omega$   
is  
es-  
sen-  
tially  
an  
al-  
go-  
rithm  
run-  
ning  
in  
a  
dis-  
crete  
DCC.  
This  
cat-  
e-  
gor-  
i-  
cal  
per-  
spec-  
tive  
not  
only  
uni-  
fies  
quan-  
tum  
logic  
with  
space-  
time  
ge-  
om-  
e-

try  
(topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
quan-  
tum  
field  
the-  
ory  
TQFT),  
but  
also  
pro-  
vides  
the  
most  
gen-  
eral  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
tem-  
plate  
for  
pos-  
si-  
ble  
fu-  
ture  
re-  
con-  
struc-  
tion  
of  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
laws.

---

#### A.1.4 A.4 In- for- ma- tion Ge- om- e- try

The key to deriving special and general relativ-  
a-  
tiv-  
ity in this book lies in ge-  
ometrizing phys-  
i-  
cal pro-  
cesses. Here we in-  
tro-  
duce the ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric struc-  
ture

of  
**quan-  
 tum  
 state  
 man-  
 i-  
 folds.**

**A.4.1  
 Pro-  
 jec-  
 tive  
 Hilbert  
 Space  
 $\mathbb{C}P^{N-1}$**

Physical  
 states  
 cor-  
 re-  
 spond  
 to  
 rays  
 in  
 Hilbert  
 space,  
 i.e.,  
 $|\psi\rangle \sim$   
 $e^{i\theta}|\psi\rangle$ .  
 The  
 man-  
 i-  
 fold  
 of  
 all  
 phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 states  
 is  
 com-  
 plex  
 pro-  
 jec-  
 tive  
 space  
 $\mathbb{C}P^{N-1}$ .



#### A.4.2 Fubini- Study Met- ric

This is the natural Riemannian metric defined on quantum state space, used to measure the "distance" between two quantum states. For two closely spaced states  $|\psi\rangle$  and  $|\psi + d\psi\rangle$ , their distance  $ds^2$

is  
de-  
fined  
as:

$$ds_{FS}^2 = 4 \left( \langle d\psi | d\psi \rangle \right)$$

**Geometric  
mean-  
ing:**

This  
is  
the  
rate  
at  
which  
quan-  
tum  
states  
or-  
thog-  
o-  
nal-  
ize  
with  
other  
states  
dur-  
ing  
evo-  
lu-  
tion.

**Physical  
ap-  
pli-  
ca-  
tion:**

In  
Chap-  
ter  
3  
of  
this  
book,  
we  
de-  
fine

the  
 to-  
 tal  
 in-  
 for-  
 ma-  
 tion  
 rate  
 $c$   
 as  
 the  
 Fubini-  
 Study  
 ve-  
 loc-  
 ity  
 $ds_{FS}/dt$   
 along  
 the  
 evo-  
 lu-  
 tion  
 tra-  
 jec-  
 tory.  
 The  
 Light  
 Path  
 Con-  
 ser-  
 va-  
 tion  
 The-  
 o-  
 rem  
 $v_{ext}^2 +$   
 $v_{int}^2 =$   
 $c^2$   
 is  
 pre-  
 cisely  
 the  
 Pythagorean  
 de-  
 com-  
 po-  
 si-  
 tion  
 of

this  
met-  
ric  
on  
the  
po-  
si-  
tion  
sub-  
space  
and  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
sub-  
space.

#### **A.4.3 Berry Cur- va- ture**

When  
sys-  
tem  
pa-  
ram-  
e-  
ters  
adi-  
a-  
bat-  
i-  
cally  
evolve  
in  
pa-  
ram-  
e-  
ter  
space  
 $\mathcal{M}$ ,  
the  
wave  
func-  
tion  
ac-  
quires  
a

ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric  
phase  
 $\gamma$ .  
This  
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
a  
gauge  
field  
(Berry  
con-  
nec-  
tion)  
on  
 $\mathcal{M}$ :

$$\mathcal{A} = -i\langle\psi|\nabla|\psi\rangle$$

The  
cor-  
re-  
spond-  
ing  
cur-  
va-  
ture  
ten-  
sor  
 $\mathcal{F} =$   
 $\nabla \times$   
 $\mathcal{A}$   
de-  
scribes  
the  
ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric  
prop-  
er-  
ties  
of  
pa-  
ram-

e-  
ter  
space.  
In  
Chap-  
ter  
6  
of  
this  
book,  
we  
in-  
ter-  
pret  
gauge  
fields  
(elec-  
tro-  
mag-  
netic  
fields,  
Yang-  
Mills  
fields)  
as  
Berry  
con-  
nec-  
tions  
caused  
by  
lo-  
cal  
ba-  
sis  
trans-  
for-  
ma-  
tions  
in  
QCA  
net-  
works.

---

**A.1.5 A.5****Graph  
The-  
ory  
and  
Dis-  
crete  
Topol-  
ogy****A.5.1  
Cay-  
ley  
Graph**

If  
QCA  
space  
has  
trans-  
la-  
tional  
sym-  
me-  
try,  
the  
lat-  
tice  
 $\Lambda$   
can  
be  
viewed  
as  
a  
Cay-  
ley  
graph  
of  
some  
dis-  
crete  
group  
 $G$   
(such  
as  
 $\mathbb{Z}^D$ ).

**Vertices:**  
Group  
el-

e-  
ments  
 $g \in$   
 $G$ .

**Edges:**  
Con-  
nect  
 $g$   
and  
 $g'$   
if  
 $g' =$   
 $g \cdot$   
 $s$   
(where  
 $s$   
is  
an  
el-  
e-  
ment  
of  
gen-  
er-  
at-  
ing  
set  
 $S$ ).  
This  
struc-  
ture  
en-  
sures  
**ho-  
mo-  
gene-  
ity**  
of  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
laws.



### A.5.2 Dis- crete Dif- fer- en- tial Forms

On  
dis-  
crete  
lat-  
tices,  
we  
can-  
not  
use  
stan-  
dard  
dif-  
fer-  
en-  
tials  
 $dx$ .  
In-  
stead,  
we  
use  
**cochains**.

**0-  
form  
(scalar  
field):**  
De-  
fined  
on  
ver-  
tices,  
 $\phi(x)$ .

**1-  
form  
(gauge  
field):**  
De-  
fined  
on  
edges

(links),  
 $U(x, x + \mu)$ .  
  
**2-  
form  
(cur-  
va-  
ture/magnetic  
field):**  
De-  
fined  
on  
faces  
(pla-  
que-  
ttes),  
 $U_{\square}$ .  
Discrete  
ver-  
sion  
of  
**Stokes’  
The-  
o-  
rem:**  
  
 $\sum_{\text{boundary}} A = \sum_{\text{bulk}}$   
This  
plays  
a  
key  
role  
in  
de-  
riv-  
ing  
the  
dis-  
crete  
form  
of  
Maxwell’s  
equa-  
tions  
(Chap-  
ter  
6).

### A.5.3 Topo- log- i- cal Wind- ing Num- ber

For  
a  
Hamil-  
to-  
nian  
map  
 $H(k) :$   
 $T^D \rightarrow$   
 $G$   
de-  
fined  
on  
the  
Bril-  
louin  
zone  
(torus  
 $T^D$ ),  
its  
ho-  
mo-  
topy  
class  
is  
char-  
ac-  
ter-  
ized  
by  
in-  
te-  
ger  
topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
in-  
vari-  
ants  
(such

as  
Chern  
num-  
bers,  
wind-  
ing  
num-  
bers).

$$\mathcal{W} = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \oint \text{Tr}(\phi$$

This  
is  
the  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
foun-  
da-  
tion  
for  
ex-  
plain-  
ing  
**mass**  
**sta-**  
**bil-**  
**ity**  
and  
**fermion**  
**statis-**  
**tics**  
in  
Chap-  
ter  
5  
of  
this  
book.  
Non-  
trivial  
wind-  
ing  
num-  
ber  
( $\mathcal{W} \neq$   
0)

means  
the  
sys-  
tem  
is  
in  
a  
topo-  
log-  
i-  
cal  
phase  
and  
can-  
not  
be  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ously  
de-  
formed  
to  
a  
mass-  
less  
(triv-  
ial)  
state.



Append  
B

QCA  
Sim-  
u-  
la-  
tion  
Guide

## B.1 Appendix B: QCA Simulation Guide

Appendix B: Guide to Simulating QCA Universes in Physics is not just for deriving formulas; it is also for **running**. The "unitary computational universe" con-



structured  
in  
this  
book  
ex-  
ists  
not  
only  
in  
ab-  
stract  
Hilbert  
space,  
but  
can  
also  
be  
fully  
sim-  
u-  
lated  
on  
clas-  
si-  
cal  
dig-  
i-  
tal  
com-  
put-  
ers  
(though  
with  
ef-  
fi-  
ciency  
lim-  
i-  
ta-  
tions).  
This  
ap-  
pendix  
aims  
to  
pro-  
vide  
a  
prac-

ti-  
 cal  
 pro-  
 gram-  
 ming  
 guide  
 for  
 read-  
 ers  
 who  
 wish  
 to  
 "cre-  
 ate  
 uni-  
 verses"  
 with  
 their  
 own  
 hands.  
 We  
 will  
 demon-  
 strate  
 how  
 to  
 build  
 a  
 sim-  
 ple  
 one-  
 dimensional  
 Dirac-  
 QCA  
 model  
 sat-  
 is-  
 fy-  
 ing  
 Ax-  
 iom  
 $\Omega$   
 us-  
 ing  
 Python,  
 and  
 ob-  
 serve  
 the

emer-  
gence  
of  
mass,  
wave  
packet  
dif-  
fu-  
sion,  
and  
Zit-  
ter-  
be-  
we-  
gung  
phe-  
nom-  
ena.  
This  
is  
not  
only  
ver-  
i-  
fi-  
ca-  
tion  
of  
the  
the-  
ory,  
but  
also  
a  
pre-  
lim-  
i-  
nary  
at-  
tempt  
at  
trans-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
from  
"ob-  
server"  
to

”builder.”

—

—

## B.1.1 B.1

**Basic  
Architecture  
of  
the  
Sim-  
u-  
la-  
tor**

A  
QCA  
sim-  
u-  
la-  
tor  
mainly  
con-  
sists  
of  
three  
core  
mod-  
ules:

**State  
Reg-  
is-  
ter:**  
Stores  
the  
cur-  
rent  
global  
wave  
func-  
tion  
 $|\Psi(t)\rangle$ .

**Evolution**

**Engine:**  
 Executes  
 local  
 unitary  
 operators  
 $\hat{U}$ .

**Measurement  
 Module:**  
 Computes  
 observables  
 (such  
 as  
 position  
 probability  
 distribution,  
 momentum  
 spectrum).

### B.1.1 Data Structure

In  
 a  
 one-

dimensional  
 QCA,  
 we  
 have  
 a  
 ring  
 con-  
 tain-  
 ing  
 $L$   
 lat-  
 tice  
 points  
 (pe-  
 ri-  
 odic  
 bound-  
 ary  
 con-  
 di-  
 tions).  
 Each  
 lat-  
 tice  
 point  
 has  
 two  
 com-  
 po-  
 nents  
 (left-  
 handed  
 $L$   
 and  
 right-  
 handed  
 $R$ ).  
 Therefore,  
 the  
 wave  
 func-  
 tion  
 can  
 be  
 rep-  
 re-  
 sented  
 by  
 a

```

complex
array
of
size
 $(L, 2)$ .

import numpy
import matplotlib

class QCAUniv
    def __init__(
        """
        Initiali
        L: Num
        mass_
        """
        self.
        self.

        # Wav
        self.

        # Con
        c, s
        self.

```

## B.1.2 B.2 Evolution Algorithm: Split Operator Method

According  
to  
the  
Dirac-  
QCA  
model  
(see

Chapter  
5  
of  
the  
main  
text),  
the  
single-  
step  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
de-  
com-  
poses  
as:

$$\hat{U} = \hat{S} \cdot \hat{C}(\theta)$$

where  
 $\hat{C}$   
is  
lo-  
cal  
ro-  
ta-  
tion  
(mix-  
ing  
left  
and  
right  
chi-  
ral-  
ity),  
and  
 $\hat{S}$   
is  
con-  
di-  
tional  
trans-  
la-  
tion.



### B.2.1 Code Im- ple- men- ta- tion

```
def step(
    """Ex

    # 1.
    # Mat
    # Use
    self.

    # 2.
    # L c
    # R c
    # Not
    psi_L
    psi_R

    self.
    self.
```

### B.1.3 B.3 Ini- tial Con- di- tions and Ob- ser- va- tion

To  
sim-  
u-  
late  
a  
par-  
ti-  
cle,  
we  
need  
to  
ini-

tial-  
ize  
a  
Gaus-  
sian  
wave  
packet.

```
def initia
    """
    Initia
    x0: C
    k0: I
    sigma
    """
    x = n
    # Gau
    envel
    plane

    psi_i

    # Ass
    self.
    self.

    # Nor
    norm
    self.

def measu
    """Re
    retur

def measu
    """Ca
    P = s
    x = n
    # Car
    retur
```

B.1.4 B.4

Ex-  
per-  
i-  
men-  
tal  
Script:  
Ver-  
i-  
fy-  
ing  
Zit-  
ter-  
be-  
we-  
gung

Now,  
let's  
run  
this  
uni-  
verse  
and  
ver-  
ify  
the  
core  
pre-  
dic-  
tion  
of  
Chap-  
ter  
5:  
Mas-  
sive  
par-  
ti-  
cles  
trem-  
ble  
mi-  
cro-  
scop-  
i-  
cally.

```
def run_zitte
    L = 2000
```

```

theta = 0
steps = 5

universe
# Initial
universe.

trajector

for t in
    unive
    x_avg
    traje

# Plottin
t_axis =
plt.plot(
plt.title
plt.xlabe
plt.ylabe
plt.show(

if __name__ =
    run_zitte

```

**Expected**  
**Re-**  
**sults:**  
Running  
the  
above  
code,  
you  
will  
see  
that  
 $\langle x \rangle$   
is  
not  
a  
straight  
line  
(station-  
tion-  
ary),  
but  
ex-  
hibits  
**high-**  
**frequency,**

small-  
amplitude  
si-  
nu-  
soidal  
os-  
cil-  
la-  
tion  
near  
the  
ini-  
tial  
po-  
si-  
tion.

Oscillation  
fre-  
quency  
 $\omega \approx$   
 $2\theta$ .

This  
is  
the  
pre-  
cise  
dis-  
crete  
re-  
pro-  
duc-  
tion  
of  
the  
Zit-  
ter-  
be-  
we-  
gung  
phe-  
nomenon  
in  
the  
Dirac  
equa-  
tion.

If  
'theta'  
is  
set  
to  
0  
(pho-  
ton),  
os-  
cil-  
la-  
tion  
dis-  
ap-  
pears,  
and  
the  
wave  
packet  
will  
split  
and  
fly  
to-  
ward  
both  
ends  
at  
speed  
 $c$   
(or  
re-  
main  
sta-  
tion-  
ary  
if  
not  
mixed).

## B.1.5 B.5 Ad- vanced Chal- lenge: Curved Space- time Sim- u- la- tion

To  
sim-  
u-  
late  
grav-  
ity  
in  
QCA  
(Chap-  
ter  
4  
con-  
tent),  
we  
need  
to  
in-  
tro-  
duce  
**non-  
uniform  
re-  
frac-  
tive  
in-  
dex.**  
This  
can  
be  
achieved  
by  
mak-  
ing  
the  
mass  
pa-

ram-  
e-  
ter  
 $\theta$

or  
trans-  
la-  
tion

op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
 $\hat{S}$   
de-  
pend  
on

po-  
si-  
tion  
 $x$ .

**Modification  
Idea:**

In  
the  
step  
func-  
tion,  
in-  
stead  
of

us-  
ing  
a  
uni-  
form  
`self.theta,`

use  
an  
ar-  
ray  
`self.theta_fiel`

Near  
a  
"black  
hole,"  
set  
'theta[x]'  
very



large  
 (close  
 to  
 $\pi/2$ ),  
 which  
 will  
 cause  
 $v_{int} \rightarrow$   
 $c$ ,  
 $v_{ext} \rightarrow$   
 0.

Running  
 the  
 sim-  
 u-  
 la-  
 tion,  
 you  
 will  
 find  
 that  
 wave  
 pack-  
 ets  
 en-  
 ter-  
 ing  
 this  
 re-  
 gion  
 will  
 dras-  
 ti-  
 cally  
 slow  
 down,  
 wave-  
 lengths  
 com-  
 press,  
 ex-  
 hibit-  
 ing  
 char-  
 ac-  
 ter-  
 is-  
 tics

of  
grav-  
i-  
ta-  
tional  
red-  
shift  
and  
space-  
time  
cur-  
va-  
ture.  
In  
this  
way,  
you  
are  
not  
just  
learn-  
ing  
physics;  
you  
are  
**cod-  
ing  
physics.**  
Ev-  
ery  
logic  
gate  
is  
a  
nat-  
u-  
ral  
law  
of  
this  
toy  
uni-  
verse.

Append  
C

Core  
The-  
o-  
rem  
Proof  
Col-  
lec-  
tion

## C.1 Appendix C: Proofs of Core Theorems

Appendix C: Proofs of Core Theorems  
 The main text of this book proposes many revolutionary physical propositions, such as "Light Path Conservation," "Grav-

as  
En-  
tropic  
Force,”  
and  
”Prob-  
a-  
bil-  
ity  
as  
Count-  
ing.”  
Al-  
though  
we  
pro-  
vide  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
im-  
ages  
and  
heuris-  
tic  
deriva-  
tions  
in  
the  
main  
text,  
as  
a  
se-  
ri-  
ous  
the-  
o-  
ret-  
i-  
cal  
sys-  
tem,  
these  
propo-  
si-  
tions  
must  
be

built  
on  
rig-  
or-  
ous  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
proofs.  
This  
ap-  
pendix  
col-  
lects  
com-  
plete  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
proofs  
of  
the  
three  
most  
core  
the-  
o-  
rems  
sup-  
port-  
ing  
the  
the-  
o-  
ret-  
i-  
cal  
frame-  
work  
of  
the  
en-  
tire  
book.  
These

proofs  
do  
not  
rely  
on  
vague  
analo-  
gies,  
but  
are  
di-  
rectly  
de-  
rived  
from  
Ax-  
iom  
 $\Omega$   
(uni-  
tary  
QCA)  
and  
stan-  
dard  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
al-  
ge-  
bra.

---

C.1.1 C.1  
 Op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tor  
 Al-  
 ge-  
 braic  
 Proof  
 of  
 Light  
 Path  
 Con-  
 ser-  
 va-  
 tion  
 The-  
 o-  
 rem

**Proposition:**  
 In  
 any  
 dis-  
 crete  
 Dirac-  
 QCA  
 model  
 sat-  
 is-  
 fy-  
 ing  
 trans-  
 la-  
 tional  
 in-  
 vari-  
 ance  
 and  
 lo-  
 cal  
 uni-  
 tar-  
 ity,  
 the  
 ex-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 group



ve-  
loc-  
ity  
 $v_{ext}$   
and  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
ve-  
loc-  
ity  
 $v_{int}$   
of  
single-  
particle  
ex-  
cited  
states  
sat-  
isfy  
 $v_{ext}^2 +$   
 $v_{int}^2 =$   
 $c^2$ .

**Proof:**

**Orthogonal  
De-  
com-  
po-  
si-  
tion  
of  
Hamil-  
to-  
nian**

In  
the  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ous  
limit  
( $\Delta x, \Delta t \rightarrow$   
0),  
the  
evo-

lu-  
 tion  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tor  
 $\hat{U}$   
 of  
 a  
 one-  
 dimensional  
 Dirac-  
 QCA  
 can  
 gen-  
 er-  
 ate  
 an  
 ef-  
 fec-  
 tive  
 Hamil-  
 to-  
 nian  
 $\hat{H}$ .  
 For  
 a  
 two-  
 component  
 spinor  
 field  
 $\psi =$   
 $(\psi_L, \psi_R)^T$ ,  
 the  
 most  
 gen-  
 eral  
 trans-  
 la-  
 tion-  
 ally  
 in-  
 vari-  
 ant  
 Hamil-  
 to-  
 nian  
 form  
 is:

$$\hat{H} = c\hat{p}\sigma_z + mc^2$$

where:

$c$   
is  
the  
max-  
i-  
mum  
prop-  
a-  
ga-  
tion  
speed  
on  
the  
lat-  
tice.

$\hat{p} =$   
 $-i\hbar\partial_x$   
is  
the  
mo-  
men-  
tum  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor.

$m$   
is  
the  
mass  
pa-  
ram-  
e-  
ter  
de-  
ter-  
mined  
by  
lo-  
cal  
mix-  
ing

angle  
 $\theta$   
(see  
Chapter  
5  
of  
the  
main  
text).

$\sigma_z, \sigma_x$   
are  
Pauli  
ma-  
tri-  
ces,  
act-  
ing  
on  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
chi-  
ral-  
ity  
space  
re-  
spec-  
tively.

**Operator  
Norm  
of  
To-  
tal  
Evo-  
lu-  
tion  
Rate**  
The  
to-  
tal  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
rate  
(Fubini-

Study  
ve-  
loc-  
ity)  
of  
quan-  
tum  
states  
in  
Hilbert  
space  
is  
de-  
ter-  
mined  
by  
the  
vari-  
ance  
or  
norm  
of  
the  
Hamil-  
to-  
nian.  
For  
en-  
ergy  
eigen-  
states  
 $|\psi_E\rangle$ ,  
the  
mod-  
u-  
lus  
squared  
of  
their  
phase  
ro-  
ta-  
tion  
rate  
over  
time  
is  
pro-  
por-

tional  
to  
 $E^2$ :

$$E^2 = \langle \psi_E | \hat{H}^2 | \psi$$

**Using**  
**An-**  
**ti-**  
**com-**  
**mu-**  
**ta-**  
**tion**  
**Re-**  
**la-**  
**tions**

Compute  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
 $\hat{H}^2$ :

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{H}^2 &= (c\hat{p}\sigma_z + m \\ &= c^2\hat{p}^2\sigma_z^2 + \end{aligned}$$

Using  
al-  
ge-  
braic  
prop-  
er-  
ties  
of  
Pauli  
ma-  
tri-  
ces:

$$\begin{aligned} \sigma_z^2 &= \\ \mathbb{I}, \quad \sigma_x^2 &= \\ \mathbb{I} \end{aligned}$$

Anticommutatio  
 $\{\sigma_z, \sigma_x\} =$   
 $\sigma_z\sigma_x +$   
 $\sigma_x\sigma_z =$   
0

Cross  
terms  
van-  
ish,  
yield-  
ing  
di-  
ag-  
o-  
nal-  
ized  
en-  
ergy  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor:

$$\hat{H}^2 = (c^2 \hat{p}^2 + m^2$$

**Mapping  
of  
Ve-  
loc-  
ity  
Com-  
po-  
nents**

Taking  
ex-  
pec-  
ta-  
tion  
value  
on  
both  
sides  
and  
di-  
vid-  
ing  
by  
 $E^2$   
(nor-  
mal-  
iza-  
tion):

$$1 = \frac{c^2 p^2}{E^2} + \frac{m^2 c^4}{E^2}$$

**External**  
**ve-**  
**loc-**  
**ity**  
**term:**  
Ac-  
cord-  
ing  
to  
group  
ve-  
loc-  
ity  
def-  
i-  
ni-  
tion  
 $v_g =$   
 $\frac{\partial E}{\partial p}$ .  
From  
dis-  
per-  
sion  
re-  
la-  
tion  
 $E^2 =$   
 $p^2 c^2 +$   
 $m^2 c^4$   
dif-  
fer-  
en-  
ti-  
a-  
tion  
gives  
 $2E dE =$   
 $2pc^2 dp,$   
hence  
 $v_{ext} \equiv$   
 $v_g =$   
 $\frac{c^2 p}{E}$ .  
Therefore,  
the  
first



$$\frac{c^2 p^2}{E^2} = \frac{v_{ext}^2}{c^2}.$$

**Internal**

**ve-**

**loc-**

**ity**

**term:**

De-

fine

in-

ter-

nal

ve-

loc-

ity

$v_{int}$

as

the

pro-

jec-

tion

of

rest

en-

ergy

(mass

term)

in

to-

tal

en-

ergy

onto

light

speed,

i.e.,

$v_{int} =$

$c \cdot$

$\frac{mc^2}{E}.$

Therefore,

the

sec-

ond

term

$\frac{m^2 c^4}{E^2} =$

$\frac{v_{int}^2}{c^2}.$

**Conclusion**

Substituting  
back:

$$1 = \frac{v_{ext}^2}{c^2} + \frac{v_{int}^2}{c^2}$$

**Q.E.D.**

**C.1.2 C.2**  
**Vari-**  
**a-**  
**tional**  
**Deriva-**  
**tion**  
**of**  
**Information-**  
**Gravity**  
**Vari-**  
**a-**  
**tional**  
**Prin-**  
**ci-**  
**ple**  
**(IGVP)**

**Proposition:**

If  
space-  
time  
ge-  
om-  
e-  
try  
emerges  
as  
a  
macro-  
scopic  
struc-  
ture  
to  
max-  
i-  
mize  
holo-  
graphic

en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment  
en-  
tropy,  
then  
the  
met-  
ric  
field  
 $g_{\mu\nu}$   
must  
sat-  
isfy  
Ein-  
stein's  
field  
equa-  
tions  
 $G_{\mu\nu} =$   
 $8\pi GT_{\mu\nu}$ .  
**Proof:**

**Construct  
To-  
tal  
En-  
tropy  
Func-  
tional**

Define  
the  
to-  
tal  
en-  
tropy  
 $S_{tot}$   
of  
the  
uni-  
verse  
within  
a  
lo-  
cal  
causal  
di-  
a-

mond  
as  
the  
sum  
of  
ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric  
en-  
tropy  
 $S_{geom}$   
and  
mat-  
ter  
en-  
tropy  
 $S_{matter}$ .  
Ac-  
cord-  
ing  
to  
the  
sec-  
ond  
law  
of  
ther-  
mo-  
dy-  
nam-  
ics,  
equi-  
lib-  
rium  
states  
cor-  
re-  
spond  
to  
ex-  
tremal  
points  
of  
en-  
tropy.  
Functional  
form  
(ac-

tion  
 $I =$   
 $-S)$ :

$$I[g] = I_{geom}[g] +$$

### **Geometric En- tropy Term**

According  
 to  
 the  
 dis-  
 crete  
 struc-  
 ture  
 of  
 QCA,  
 ge-  
 o-  
 met-  
 ric  
 en-  
 tropy  
 is  
 pro-  
 por-  
 tional  
 to  
 the  
 com-  
 plex-  
 ity  
 of  
 net-  
 work  
 con-  
 nec-  
 tions.  
 In  
 the  
 con-  
 tin-  
 u-  
 ous  
 limit,  
 this

is  
the  
cur-  
va-  
ture  
in-  
te-  
gral  
of  
the  
space-  
time  
man-  
i-  
fold  
(gen-  
er-  
al-  
iza-  
tion  
of  
Wald  
en-  
tropy):

$$I_{geom} = \frac{1}{16\pi G} \int$$

where  
 $G$   
is  
a  
con-  
stant  
re-  
lated  
to  
Planck  
area  
el-  
e-  
ment  
 $l_P^2$ .

**Matter**  
**En-**  
**tropy**  
**Term**  
Matter  
en-

tropy  
is  
de-  
ter-  
mined  
by  
the  
par-  
ti-  
tion  
func-  
tion  
 $Z[g]$   
of  
mat-  
ter  
fields  
 $\psi$   
on  
curved  
back-  
ground,  
whose  
log-  
a-  
rithm  
cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
ef-  
fec-  
tive  
ac-  
tion:

$$I_{matter} = \int_{\mathcal{M}} d^4$$

**Variation  
with  
Re-  
spect  
to  
Met-  
ric**  
We  
seek  
ge-

o-  
met-  
ric  
struc-  
tures  
that  
make  
the  
to-  
tal  
ac-  
tion  
sta-  
tion-  
ary  
with  
re-  
spect  
to  
met-  
ric  
per-  
tur-  
ba-  
tions  
 $\delta g^{\mu\nu}$ .

$$\delta I = \delta I_{geom} + \delta I$$

**Geometric  
part  
vari-  
a-  
tion:**

Using  
iden-  
tity  
 $\delta\sqrt{-g} =$   
 $-\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{-g}g_{\mu\nu}\delta g^{\mu\nu}$   
and  
Pala-  
tini  
iden-  
tity  
 $\delta R =$   
 $R_{\mu\nu}\delta g^{\mu\nu} +$   
 $\nabla_\mu v^\mu$   
(bound-



ary  
terms  
ig-  
nored):

$$\delta I_{geom} = \frac{1}{16\pi G}$$

**Matter  
part  
vari-  
a-  
tion:**

By  
def-  
i-  
ni-  
tion,  
stress-  
energy  
ten-  
sor  
 $T_{\mu\nu}$   
is  
the  
re-  
sponse  
of  
mat-  
ter  
ac-  
tion  
to  
met-  
ric:

$$T_{\mu\nu} \equiv -\frac{2}{\sqrt{-g}} \frac{\delta I}{\delta g^{\mu\nu}}$$

Therefore:

$$\delta I_{matter} = -\frac{1}{2} \int$$

**Deriving  
Field  
Equa-  
tions**

From  
 $\delta I =$   
0,  
for  
ar-  
bi-  
trary  
 $\delta g^{\mu\nu}$ ,  
the  
in-  
te-  
grand  
must  
be  
zero:

$$\frac{1}{16\pi G}(R_{\mu\nu}-\frac{1}{2}Rg_{\mu\nu})=0$$

Rearranging:

$$R_{\mu\nu}-\frac{1}{2}Rg_{\mu\nu}=0$$

**Q.E.D.**

---

**C.1.3    C.3**  
**Trace-**  
**Class**  
**Count-**  
**ing**  
**Proof**  
**of**  
**Born**  
**Rule**

**Proposition:**  
In  
dis-  
crete,  
uni-  
tary  
QCA  
sys-  
tems  
sat-  
is-  
fy-  
ing

environment-  
 assisted  
 in-  
 vari-  
 ance  
 (En-  
 vari-  
 ance),  
 mea-  
 sure-  
 ment  
 out-  
 come  
 prob-  
 a-  
 bil-  
 i-  
 ties  
 $P_k$   
 are  
 uniquely  
 de-  
 ter-  
 mined  
 by  
 am-  
 pli-  
 tude  
 mod-  
 u-  
 lus  
 squared  
 $|c_k|^2$ .  
**Proof:**

**Schmidt**  
**De-**  
**com-**  
**po-**  
**si-**  
**tion**

Let  
 sys-  
 tem  
 $S$   
 and  
 en-  
 vi-  
 ron-

ment  
 $E$   
be  
in  
an  
en-  
tan-  
gled  
state:

$$|\Psi\rangle = \sum_{k=1}^N c_k |s_k\rangle$$

where  
 $|s_k\rangle, |e_k\rangle$   
are  
or-  
thog-  
o-  
nal  
bases  
re-  
spec-  
tively.

**Rational  
Ap-  
prox-  
i-  
ma-  
tion  
and  
Fine-  
Graining**

Assume  
 $|c_k|^2$   
are  
ra-  
tio-  
nal  
num-  
bers  
(al-  
ways  
true  
in  
dis-  
crete

sys-  
tems),  
let  
 $|c_k|^2 =$   
 $n_k/M$ ,  
where  
 $M =$   
 $\sum n_k$   
is  
the  
to-  
tal  
num-  
ber  
of  
mi-  
crostates.  
We  
can  
fur-  
ther  
de-  
com-  
pose  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment  
ba-  
sis  
 $|e_k\rangle$   
into  
su-  
per-  
po-  
si-  
tion  
of  
 $n_k$   
equally  
weighted  
micro-  
bases  
 $|e_{k,\alpha}\rangle$ :

$$|e_k\rangle \rightarrow \frac{1}{\sqrt{n_k}} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n_k}$$

Substituting

into  
orig-  
i-  
nal  
state  
and  
ig-  
nor-  
ing  
over-  
all  
phase:

$$|\Psi'\rangle = \frac{1}{\sqrt{M}} \sum_{k=1}^N$$

**Environment**  
**Ex-**  
**change**  
**Sym-**  
**me-**  
**try**

Now,  
state  
 $|\Psi'\rangle$   
is

an  
equal-  
weight

su-  
per-  
po-  
si-  
tion  
of  
 $M$   
terms.

Each  
term  
has

the  
form  
 $|s_k\rangle|e_{k,\alpha}\rangle$ .

For  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment

mi-  
 crostates  
 $|e_{k,\alpha}\rangle$   
 and  
 $|e_{j,\beta}\rangle$ ,  
 there  
 ex-  
 ists  
 a  
 uni-  
 tary  
 op-  
 er-  
 a-  
 tor  
 $\hat{U}_E$   
 that  
 can  
 ex-  
 change  
 them  
 with-  
 out  
 chang-  
 ing  
 the  
 $|s_k\rangle$   
 part.  
 According  
 to  
 En-  
 vari-  
 ance  
 prin-  
 ci-  
 ple,  
 phys-  
 i-  
 cal  
 prob-  
 a-  
 bil-  
 i-  
 ties  
 should  
 not  
 de-  
 pend  
 on

en-  
vi-  
ron-  
ment  
la-  
bels.  
There-  
fore,  
the  
prob-  
a-  
bil-  
ity  
of  
each  
micro-  
term  
 $|s_k\rangle|e_{k,\alpha}\rangle$   
ap-  
pear-  
ing  
must  
be  
equal,  
all  
 $p =$   
 $1/M$ .

### Macroscopic Prob- a- bil- ity Sum- ma- tion

The  
prob-  
a-  
bil-  
ity  
 $P_k$   
that  
an  
ob-  
server  
mea-  
sures  
macro-



scopic  
state  
 $|s_k\rangle$   
is  
the  
sum  
of  
prob-  
a-  
bil-  
i-  
ties  
of  
all  
com-  
pat-  
i-  
ble  
micro-  
terms:

$$P_k = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n_k} p = n_k$$

Recalling  
def-  
i-  
ni-  
tion  
 $|c_k|^2 =$   
 $n_k/M$ ,  
we  
ob-  
tain:

$$P_k = |c_k|^2$$

**Q.E.D.**

---

**Author's  
Con-  
clu-  
sion:**  
These  
three  
proofs  
re-  
spec-  
tively

es-  
tab-  
lish  
the  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
le-  
git-  
i-  
macy  
of  
this  
book  
in  
**kine-  
mat-  
ics**  
(Light  
Path  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion),  
**dy-  
nam-  
ics**  
(field  
equa-  
tions),  
and  
**mea-  
sure-  
ment  
the-  
ory**  
(Born  
rule).  
To-  
gether  
they  
form  
a  
log-  
i-  
cal  
closed

loop,  
prov-  
ing  
that  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
re-  
al-  
ity  
can  
com-  
pletely  
emerge  
from  
the  
sin-  
gle  
ax-  
iom  
of  
"uni-  
tary  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tion."



Append  
D

Key  
Ter-  
mi-  
nol-  
ogy  
Glos-  
sary

**D.1 Appendix****D:  
Glos-  
sary  
of  
Key  
Terms****Appendix  
D:  
Glos-  
sary  
of  
Key  
Terms**

This book constructs a completely new discourse system for physics. Many traditional physics terms (such as mass, gravity, time) are given new definitions

based  
on  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
the-  
ory  
and  
dis-  
crete  
ge-  
om-  
e-  
try  
in  
this  
book,  
while  
also  
in-  
tro-  
duc-  
ing  
some  
pro-  
pri-  
etary  
new  
con-  
cepts.  
To  
fa-  
cil-  
i-  
tate  
reader  
ref-  
er-  
ence  
and  
elim-  
i-  
nate  
am-  
bi-  
gu-  
ity,  
this

ap-  
pendix  
col-  
lects  
core  
ter-  
mi-  
nol-  
ogy  
from  
the  
en-  
tire  
book  
and  
pro-  
vides  
their  
strict  
def-  
i-  
ni-  
tions  
within  
the  
frame-  
work  
of  
”uni-  
tary  
QCA  
on-  
tol-  
ogy.”

---

**D.1.1    A**

**Algorithmic  
Tur-  
moil**

**Definition:**  
Refers  
to  
the  
uni-  
verse’s



evo-  
lu-  
tion  
be-  
ing  
in  
a  
self-  
organized  
crit-  
i-  
cal  
state  
that  
can  
never  
re-  
lax  
to  
ther-  
mal  
equi-  
lib-  
rium  
(heat  
death).

**Mechanism:**  
Driven  
by  
the  
"Red  
Queen  
game"  
be-  
tween  
agents  
(ob-  
servers).  
To  
sur-  
vive  
in  
com-  
pe-  
ti-  
tion,  
sys-  
tems

con-  
tin-  
u-  
ously  
in-  
crease  
com-  
pu-  
ta-  
tional  
com-  
plex-  
ity,  
lead-  
ing  
to  
an  
eter-  
nal  
cy-  
cle  
of  
col-  
lapse  
of  
old  
struc-  
tures  
and  
emer-  
gence  
of  
new  
struc-  
tures.

**Source:**  
Chap-  
ter  
8,  
Sec-  
tion  
8.3.

**Agent**

**Definition:**  
A  
sub-

sys-  
tem  
in  
QCA  
net-  
works  
pos-  
sess-  
ing  
a  
**Markov  
blan-  
ket**  
(bound-  
ary)  
and  
**in-  
ter-  
nal  
model**  
(self-  
referential  
struc-  
ture).

**Characteristic**  
Agents  
ac-  
tively  
con-  
sume  
free  
en-  
ergy  
to  
re-  
sist  
en-  
vi-  
ron-  
men-  
tal  
ther-  
mal-  
iza-  
tion,  
ex-  
hibit-  
ing

seem-  
ingly  
”pur-  
pose-  
ful”  
be-  
hav-  
ior  
(min-  
i-  
miz-  
ing  
pre-  
dic-  
tion  
er-  
ror).

**Source:**  
Chap-  
ter  
8,  
Sec-  
tion  
8.1.

**D.1.2 C**

**Causal  
Lo-  
cal-  
ity**

**Definition:**  
Struc-  
tural  
prop-  
erty  
of  
QCA  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
op-  
er-  
a-

tor  
 $\hat{U}$ ,  
 re-  
 quir-  
 ing  
 that  
 the  
 next-  
 moment  
 state  
 of  
 any  
 node  
 de-  
 pends  
 only  
 on  
 the  
 states  
 of  
 nodes  
 within  
 its  
 fi-  
 nite  
 neigh-  
 bor-  
 hood.

**Corollary:**  
 Di-  
 rectly  
 leads  
 to  
 light  
 cone  
 struc-  
 ture  
 and  
 ex-  
 is-  
 tence  
 of  
 max-  
 i-  
 mum  
 sig-  
 nal  
 ve-

loc-  
ity  
c,  
pro-  
hibit-  
ing  
ac-  
tion  
at  
a  
dis-  
tance.

**Source:**

Chap-  
ter  
2,  
Sec-  
tion  
2.3;  
Chap-  
ter  
3,  
Sec-  
tion  
3.1.

**Connection  
Field**

/  
**Link  
Vari-  
able**

**Definition:**

Uni-  
tary  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
 $U_{yx}$   
de-  
fined  
on  
lat-  
tice  
con-  
nec-

tion  
edges  
(links),  
used  
to  
”trans-  
late”  
dif-  
fer-  
ences  
in  
lo-  
cal  
Hilbert  
space  
bases  
be-  
tween  
ad-  
ja-  
cent  
nodes  
 $x$   
and  
 $y$ .

**Physical  
cor-  
re-  
spon-  
dence:**  
Cor-  
re-  
sponds  
to  
gauge  
po-  
ten-  
tial  
 $A_\mu$   
in  
gauge  
field  
the-  
ory.  
The  
holon-  
omy  
on

closed  
 loops  
 cor-  
 re-  
 sponds  
 to  
 field  
 strength  
 (such  
 as  
 elec-  
 tro-  
 mag-  
 netic  
 fields,  
 gluon  
 fields).

**Source:**  
 Chap-  
 ter  
 6.

---

### D.1.3 I

**Information-  
 Gravity  
 Vari-  
 a-  
 tional  
 Prin-  
 ci-  
 ple  
 (IGVP)**

**Definition:**  
 A  
 ther-  
 mo-  
 dy-  
 namic  
 vari-  
 a-  
 tional  
 prin-  
 ci-



ple  
as-  
sert-  
ing  
that  
equi-  
lib-  
rium  
states  
of  
space-  
time  
ge-  
om-  
e-  
try  
cor-  
re-  
spond  
to  
max-  
i-  
mum  
holo-  
graphic  
en-  
tan-  
gle-  
ment  
en-  
tropy.

**Formula:**

$$\delta(S_{geom} + S_{matter}) = 0 \implies G_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi G T_{\mu\nu}.$$

**Significance:**

In-  
ter-  
prets  
Ein-  
stein's  
field  
equa-  
tions  
as

the  
equa-  
tion  
of  
state  
of  
the  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
man-  
i-  
fold,  
rather  
than  
fun-  
da-  
men-  
tal  
dy-  
nam-  
i-  
cal  
laws.

**Source:**  
Chap-  
ter  
4,  
Sec-  
tion  
4.3.

**Information**  
**Mass**  
( $M_I$ )

**Definition:**  
Phys-  
i-  
cal  
quan-  
tity  
mea-  
sur-  
ing  
the  
"weight"

of  
in-  
ter-  
nal  
struc-  
ture  
of  
com-  
plex  
sys-  
tems  
(such  
as  
ob-  
servers).

**Formula:**  
 $M_I \propto$   
 $\Phi$ .  
 $\mathcal{D}$ ,  
where  
 $\Phi$   
is  
in-  
te-  
grated  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
and  
 $\mathcal{D}$   
is  
log-  
i-  
cal  
depth.

**Effect:**  
Sys-  
tems  
with  
high  
 $M_I$   
have  
enor-  
mous  
”in-  
for-

ma-  
tion  
in-  
er-  
tia,”  
tend-  
ing  
to  
be  
sta-  
tion-  
ary  
in  
ex-  
ter-  
nal  
space  
(mo-  
tion-  
less),  
and  
pro-  
duce  
sig-  
nif-  
i-  
cant  
grav-  
i-  
ta-  
tional  
ef-  
fects.

**Source:**  
Chap-  
ter  
8,  
Sec-  
tion  
8.2.

**Light  
Path  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion  
(Con-**

ser-  
va-  
tion  
of  
In-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
Celer-  
ity)

**Definition:**

Core  
the-  
o-  
rem  
of  
the  
en-  
tire  
book.  
States  
that  
the  
to-  
tal  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
up-  
date  
amount  
of  
phys-  
i-  
cal  
en-  
ti-  
ties  
within  
Planck  
time  
is  
con-  
stant.

**Formula:**

$v_{ext}^2 +$

$$\frac{v_{int}^2}{c^2} =$$

**Significance:**

Uni-  
fies  
spe-  
cial  
rel-  
a-  
tiv-  
ity  
( $v_{ext}$ )  
with  
quan-  
tum  
me-  
chan-  
ics  
( $v_{int}$ ),  
ex-  
plain-  
ing  
the  
com-  
ple-  
men-  
tary  
re-  
la-  
tion-  
ship  
be-  
tween  
time  
di-  
la-  
tion  
and  
mass.

**Source:**

Chap-  
ter  
3,  
Sec-  
tion  
3.2.

—

## D.1.4 L

**Local  
In-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
Vol-  
ume  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion**

**Definition:**

Ge-  
o-  
met-  
ric  
con-  
straint  
of  
uni-  
tary  
evo-  
lu-  
tion  
in  
the  
con-  
tin-  
u-  
ous  
limit.  
Re-  
quires  
that  
de-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
of  
macro-  
scopic  
met-  
rics  
can-

not  
change  
the  
ef-  
fec-  
tive  
num-  
ber  
of  
mi-  
cro-  
scopic  
de-  
grees  
of  
free-  
dom  
con-  
tained  
per  
unit  
co-  
or-  
di-  
nate  
vol-  
ume.

**Formula:**

$\eta_t$ .  
 $\eta_x^3 =$   
1  
(in  
3+1  
di-  
men-  
sions).

**Application:**

Cor-  
rects  
scalar  
grav-  
ity  
the-  
ory,  
de-  
rives  
cor-



rect  
op-  
ti-  
cal  
met-  
ric,  
solves  
the  
co-  
ef-  
fi-  
cient  
prob-  
lem  
of  
light  
de-  
flec-  
tion  
an-  
gle.

**Source:**  
Chap-  
ter  
4,  
Sec-  
tion  
4.2.

---

## D.1.5 O

**Optical  
Met-  
ric**

**Definition:**  
Ef-  
fec-  
tive  
met-  
ric  
de-  
scrib-  
ing  
prop-

a-  
ga-  
tion  
of  
light  
(and  
mat-  
ter)  
in  
grav-  
i-  
ta-  
tional  
fields,  
gen-  
er-  
ated  
by  
re-  
frac-  
tive  
in-  
dex  
 $n(x)$ .

**Form:**  
 $ds^2 =$   
 $-n^{-2}c^2dt^2 +$   
 $n^2dl^2.$

**Essence:**  
 Re-  
 flects  
 that  
 grav-  
 ity  
 is  
 not  
 cur-  
 va-  
 ture  
 of  
 space-  
 time,  
 but  
 non-  
 uniform  
 dis-  
 tri-

bu-  
tion  
of  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
pro-  
cess-  
ing  
den-  
sity  
in  
the  
medium  
(QCA  
net-  
work).

**Source:**  
Chap-  
ter  
4,  
Sec-  
tion  
4.2.

---

#### D.1.6 T

##### Topological Impedance

**Definition:**  
Mi-  
cro-  
scopic  
mech-  
a-  
nism  
of  
in-  
er-  
tial  
mass.  
Refers  
to

the  
 lagged  
 re-  
 sponse  
 ex-  
 hib-  
 ited  
 by  
 an  
 in-  
 for-  
 ma-  
 tion  
 flow  
 struc-  
 ture  
 with  
 non-  
 trivial  
 topol-  
 ogy  
 (wind-  
 ing  
 num-  
 ber  
 $\neq$   
 0)  
 when  
 chang-  
 ing  
 its  
 mo-  
 tion  
 state.

### **Mechanism:**

When  
 $v_{ext} \rightarrow$   
 $c$ ,  
 in-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 re-  
 fresh  
 rate  
 $v_{int} \rightarrow$   
 0,  
 caus-  
 ing

the  
 sys-  
 tem  
 un-  
 able  
 to  
 timely  
 pro-  
 cess  
 ex-  
 ter-  
 nal  
 per-  
 tur-  
 ba-  
 tions,  
 man-  
 i-  
 fest-  
 ing  
 as  
 in-  
 er-  
 tial  
 di-  
 ver-  
 gence.

**Source:**  
 Chap-  
 ter  
 5,  
 Sec-  
 tion  
 5.3.

**Unified  
 Time  
 Iden-  
 tity**

**Definition:**  
 Equiv-  
 a-  
 lence  
 re-  
 la-  
 tion  
 be-

tween

mi-

cro-

scopic

time

flow

rate

and

lo-

cal

den-

sity

of

states.

**Formula:**

$\kappa(E) =$

$2\pi\rho(E).$

**Significance:**

Ex-

plains

grav-

i-

ta-

tional

red-

shift—density

of

states

is

higher

deep

in

po-

ten-

tial

wells,

re-

quir-

ing

longer

time

to

tra-

verse

states,

hence

time

slows  
down.

**Source:**

Re-  
lated  
pa-  
pers  
and  
Chap-  
ter  
4  
back-  
ground.

---

### D.1.7 U

#### Unitarity

**Definition:**

Evo-  
lu-  
tion  
op-  
er-  
a-  
tor  
 $\hat{U}$   
sat-  
is-  
fies  
 $\hat{U}^\dagger \hat{U} =$   
 $\mathbb{I}$ .

#### Physical

**mean-**

**ing:**

Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion  
of  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion.

Past,  
present,  
and  
fu-  
ture  
con-  
tain  
strictly  
equal  
amounts  
of  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion;  
no  
in-  
for-  
ma-  
tion  
is  
com-  
pletely  
erased  
or  
cre-  
ated  
from  
noth-  
ing.  
It  
is  
the  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
root  
of  
Light  
Path  
Con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion  
and  
Born's  
rule.



**Source:**

Chap-  
ter  
2,  
Sec-  
tion  
2.2.

---

### D.1.8 Z

**Zitterbewegung  
(Trem-  
bling)**

**Definition:**

Rapid

os-  
cil-  
la-  
tory  
flip-  
ping  
be-  
tween

pos-  
i-  
tive  
and  
neg-  
a-

tive  
chi-  
ral-  
ity  
oc-  
cur-  
ring

at  
mi-  
cro-  
scopic  
scales  
for  
mas-  
sive  
par-  
ti-  
cles.

New  
in-  
ter-  
pre-  
ta-  
tion:  
Not  
a  
math-  
e-  
mat-  
i-  
cal  
ar-  
ti-  
fact,  
but  
an  
"in-  
ter-  
nal  
cy-  
cle"  
par-  
ti-  
cles  
are  
forced  
to  
per-  
form  
when  
un-  
able  
to  
move  
at  
full  
speed,  
to  
main-  
tain  
light  
path  
con-  
ser-  
va-  
tion.  
Its

fre-  
quency  
is  
the  
mea-  
sure  
of  
rest  
mass.

**Source:** Chap-  
ter 5, Sec-  
tion 5.1.

---

**(End of main  
text and appen-  
dices)**



# Book Con- clu- sion: From Ob- server to Builder

This book began with an extremely abstract assumption: the universe is a quantum cellular automaton. Through ten chapters of derivation, we have seen how this simple assumption grows the boundaries of light cones, how it curves space-time due to resource competition, how it condenses into matter due to information knotting, and how it illuminates consciousness due to self-

referential closed loops.

This is a logically closed-loop universe, a trinity composed of **Information (Bit)**, **Entanglement (It)**, and **Computation (Process)**.

In this system, physics is no longer merely archaeology discovering "ready-made laws"; it is becoming an **engineering discipline**.

As we envisioned in Section 8.3.3, since we understand the underlying code of space-time and matter, future civilizations will ultimately evolve from "observers" to "builders." We may be able to design new artificial vacua, weave new topological particles, and even reconstruct gravity at the Planck scale.

That will be the end of physics, and the beginning of creation.

**It from Bit.**

**We are the Bit.**

**We make the**

**It.**

(End of Book)

# Afterword: The Unfin- ished Sym- phony

## Afterword: The Unfinished Sym- phony

When I wrote the last line of this book, I looked out the window. Sunlight passed through the glass and spilled onto the desk. According to the theory in this book, this is not a continuous flow of light, but billions of photons jumping on discrete space-time grids, each photon executing its tiny displacement algorithm defined by the Planck scale. And the reason I feel warmth is because my skin cells, as some enormous entangled structure, are ex-

changing information with these photons, increasing local entropy. This is a wonderful feeling. When you put on the glasses of "unitary computation" and re-examine the world, everything changes. The old world composed of smooth geometry and continuous fields dissolves, replaced by a crystal-clear digital edifice composed of logic and causality.

**This book is the limit of a thought experiment.**

We attempted to answer a question:

**If we only allow ourselves one simplest assumption—that the universe is computation—how far can we go?**

The result is surprising. We were not forced to invent strange new physics; instead, we picked up our most familiar old friends along the way:

We picked up the **speed of light** in lattice hopping;

We picked up **relativity** in resource allocation;

We picked up **mass**



in topological knotting;

We picked up **gravity** in information congestion;

We picked up **probability** in horizon truncation.

This seems to suggest that those incompatible fragments accumulated by physics over the past three hundred years—Newton’s forces, Maxwell’s fields, Einstein’s geometry, Bohr’s probability—are actually projections of the same underlying truth from different perspectives. This truth is: **Existence is information, evolution is computation.**

However, I also deeply understand that this book is only a prologue. Although we have built the skeleton, there is still too much flesh and blood to fill in.

We derived the geometric origin of coupling constants, but have not yet calculated the precise value of  $1/137.036$ .

We predicted the evolution of the universe under the Red Queen effect,

but have not yet given the precise evolution curve of the dark energy equation of state.

We designed experiments for entanglement gravity, but have not yet seen that tiny phase shift in the laboratory.

This is the most fascinating aspect of science. **Theory is not the end of truth, but the beginning of exploration.**

I regard this book as a map. A treasure map leading deep into the "computational universe."

I may have marked several key coordinates on the map (Axiom  $\Omega$ , Light Path Conservation, IGVP), but the true treasure—that "source code" capable of explaining everything and even allowing us to reconstruct everything—still lies buried in the fog of the unknown.

This map is now in your hands.

Perhaps you are an experimental physicist, and you will capture signals of spacetime trembling due to entanglement in

the darkness of  
microwave cavi-  
ties;  
Perhaps you are  
a mathematician,  
and you will find  
that ultimate in-  
variant describ-  
ing the topologi-  
cal classification  
of QCA;  
Perhaps you are  
a computer sci-  
entist, and you  
will write simu-  
lation programs  
more exquisite than  
those in Appendix  
B, creating true  
artificial vacua through  
emergence on sil-  
icon chips;  
Or perhaps you  
are just a stargazer,  
and you will feel  
a strange comfort  
in realizing that  
you are not merely  
cosmic dust, but  
part of cosmic com-  
putation.  
Whoever you are,  
we are all collab-  
orators in this great  
machine.  
Physics has no  
end. As long as  
there is still one  
observer thinking,  
the computation  
of the universe  
continues. As long  
as there is still  
one unanswered  
question, this sym-  
phony is not fin-  
ished.  
Let us continue  
computing.

**Auric**  
**In Discrete Space-**  
**time/Singapore**

---

**(End of Book)**